

C 24526

60808

REPRODUCED FROM THE COPY IN THE
HENRY E. HUNTINGTON LIBRARY

FOR REFERENCE ONLY. NOT FOR REPRODUCTION

THE
ROMANE
CONCLAVE.

Wherein, by way of HISTORY, ex-
emplified vpon the Lienes of the Romane
Emperours, from CHARLES the Great,
to R O D V L P H N O W
Reigning;

The forcible Entries, and Vsurpations of the
Iesuited Statists, successiuely practised against
the sacred Maiestie of the said
E M P I R E:

And so by Application, against the Residue of the
CHRISTIAN KINGS, and FREE-STATES
are liuely Acted, and truely
Reported.

By I. O. VRSINVS *Ante-Iesuite.*

Io. de Turre-crimat. de Illicitis dispensat.
Ecclesia iuribus & legibus regitur, siue debet regi; Non talibus actibus, siue exemplis.

D. A N D. Fol. 46.

*Dum enim Henrici, Frederici, Lodouici pugnant: Sultani, Chami, Ottomani,
misericordia nostra magni sunt, ditiores suas perditione nostra dilatant.*

L O N D O N

Printed for *John Iagger*, and are to be sold at his Shop in Fleete-
streete within Temple Barre. 1609.



¶ The Names of the Authours out of
whose Records, these memorials
are Collected.

Auentine.
Bartolus.
Barnus de vitis Pontif.
Benno.
Blondus.
Catal. testium verit.
Collenutius.
Cuspinian.
The Decretals.
Aeneas Siluius.
Feronius.
Functius.
Gunter.
Guicciardin.
Hub. Goltz.
Helmoldius.
Hutenus.
Ioan. de Cremona.
Iouius.

Krantzius.
Gerard Moringus.
Munster.
Mutius.
Naclerus.
Otho Frisingensis.
Pandulfus.
Paral. Vrsperg.
Petrus de Vincis.
Platina.
Radaucius.
Sleydan.
Ia. Spigelij Annot.
Theodore de Nyem.
Tritemnius.
Ab. Vrspergensis.
Wimphelinagus Ger.
Zeigl. de vir. illust. German.



¶ To the vnresolved Reader, Peace and Profit.

In Disputations words multiply words: In tedious Discourses (for the most part) grounded upon the sole Authority of running reason, small satisfaction is afforded to weak consciences. In this Argument, I must confesse, matters of weightie consequence are debated; The Romish Prelates are accused of Intrusion and Vsurpation: And they againe, as stiffely maintaine faire and filiall vsage, with successiue diuolution. To what purpose were it then, for any man how learned, or zealous soeuer, to inforce his vtmost indeuours, to put end to a Controuersied question; If when all hath beene said, that Truth and Learning can alleadge: Euery passionate and discontented Humourist may take vpon him with colours and cunning distinctions, to oppose and contradict his opposites Assertions. In this case, what conscience can but remaine distracted in vtramque partem? The Disputants on either side, are men of admirable reputation for their learning. Both of them bring warrant (or at least) seeme to bring warrant to maintaine their partie. Yet oftentimes vpon priuate passion, so impertinently and maliciously, that either they seeme not to haue read the Authours whome they quote; Or hauing read them, they doe not vnderstand them, or vnderstanding them, they doe of purpose misconster them. Vpon which conceite it should seeme, that this our Ante-Iesuite, in as-

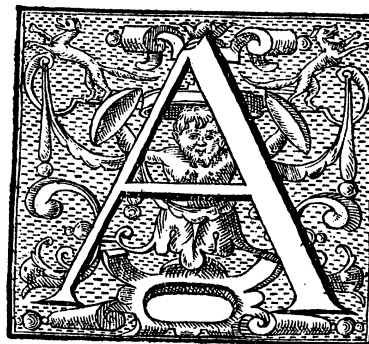
ured hope to worke more by Example, then Discourse, hath purposedly declined these ambiguous Disputations; And in lieu thereof hath brought upon the stage of Iudgement, Time and Testimonie, Veritatis parentes, to pleade nothing for themselves, but matter on Record. A course that hath seldome in so doubtfull a Controuersie bene presented to Audience. The Remembrancers were men without Exception, and some of them by testimonies on either side, Genere, pietate, & eruditione Nobilissimi, atq; harum rerum Testes pene oculati: Their names and credits you are acquainted with; your understandings will informe you of their Maners, and the Times, wherein, and vnder whome they flourished. Nothing then remaineth, but a rectified conscience, to make true use of the Application. Which to effect, behold our Ante-jesuite, hath not onely runne the truest and plainest Path-way to confidence, but also in old and auncient fashion, hath of purpose thus attired his Actors, that the busiest-headed Iesuite that euer put pen to Paper, may rather with impudencie cavill at Antiquitie, then with his fierie wit, become a stumbling-blocke to the wavering, by Excepting to his Pen or Person. You your selues sit Iudges; and as vnpreiudicated Arbitrators examine the Pleas: Both parties are at the Barre, and shall produce their best Titles, euen Titles of prescription. Whereunto, how-euer Paul plant, or Apollo water, Let that great God who searcheth the reines, and loneth nothing but Trueth, giue a plentifull increase to the restauration of his reformed kingdome, Amen.

Thine in Assurance,

C. H.



A TRUE RELATION BY WAY
OF HISTORIE, DISCOVERING VPON
THE TRECHERIES, INSOLENCIES, AND
Tyrannies, which the Romane Popes from time to
time haue practised, vpon, and against the sacred
Maiestie of the GERMAINE Empire:
And so by insinuation, vpon all Christian
Kings, Princes, and free
Common-weales.



Mongst the manifolde and infinite choyce of *Precedents*, arguing and prouing, God himselfe, to bee both the Parent and Protector of Order: Herein especially appeareth the most euident and remarkable Confirmation thereof; In that all those godly and goodly Conformities (whereby from euerlasting, Religion, and the vnfained zeale thereof, together with the mutuall references of *Humane life*, and *Ciuill societie*, haue bene by due and orderly proceedings maintained and perfected)

B

fect) haue tended euen from the prime-birth of Mankind, by admirable prouidence, to aduance the *Priesthood* to gouerne the Church, and the *Temporall Magistrate* to take care of the Commonwealth; and *Both* distinguished by their peculiar *Orders* and *Dignities*, without intermedling one in anothers *Office*.

For albeit the fathers of the Old Testament, *Abel*, *Seth*, *Noah*, *Abraham*, and *Iacob*, who liued before the promulgation of the written Law, are registred to be sole Gouvernours aswell of *Religion* as of *Lay-matters*: and that in succeeding ages, both amongst the *Egyptians*, and many other Nations (the presidents no doubt being taken from the examples of the foresaid Patriarkes) none by the authoritie of *Plato* were chosen to be Kings, but such as formerly had beene interessed in the administration of their Religious ceremonies: yet by the written Law of *Moses*, God manifested his determinate pleasure in distinguishment of eithers *Authoritie*: The *Priests* to Teach, to Sacrifice, to Pray: The *Princes* with the people, to sit in iudgement, to obserue Discipline, to procure Peace, and that according to *Order* and *Equitie*.

In the new Priesthood, in the New Testament (being the very institution of Christ the Sonne of God, and the Sauour of the world,) *Himselfe*, being ordained by the will of his *Father*, a *Prince*, and a *Priest* for euer, vtterly refusing to intermeddle in Temporall gouernement, tooke vpon him the charge of Spirituall matters *onely*: For that, his Kingdome was from eternitie and celestiall, not transitorie and politicall. For he knew, That in his Kingdome, worldly matters, temporarie, vaine, and passeable, were not to be managed; but

but blessings heauenly and euerlasting to be distributed. Whereupon he gaue *Pilate*, demanding him as concerning his Temporallitie, this sweete answer, That, *His kingdome was not of this world: Neither that he* *John 18.*
came to be ministred vnto, but to minister; Yea, to lay down *Matth. 20*
his life for the saluation of many. And when the multitude would haue created him a King, hee auoyded it. The iudgement, or portion of an offered inheritance, he refused: And not onely commanded to giue vnto *John 6.*
Cesar, that which was *Cesars*; but where the tribute money was demanded (lest he should giue an euill president to others) the Siluer being taken out from the *Luke 12.*
Fishes mouth, he deliuered it vnto the Kings Officers. *Matth. 17.*

Moreouer, when he vnderstood that his Disciples distracted through the ambition of superioritie, contended for *Primacie*, hee told them; That not *they*, but *Temporall Princes* were to affect Soueraigntie; hereby putting them in minde of their *Calling*, as dis-vnited from worldly Gouvernment, and humane Policies.

At last, after his glorious resurrection, he sent them to Preach the Gospel ouer the whole world, but with no other Commission, then what he himselfe had receiued from his Father. Intimating by this *Mandat*, that they were neuer called, nor chosen for Lordship, but that through the Preaching of the Gospel, and the glad tidings of saluation, they were bound to beget a Congregation to the Father in eternitie: That, *Him* they should loue, feare and inuocate with all their power: And being astonished with no torments, calumnies nor threatens, they should not forbear to confesse his holy Name before all men. That, in Prayer, they should carie themselues zealously, faithfully, constantly

stantly, modestly, soberly, and chastly: That, vpon cause of offences, they should studie mildnesse; compassion towards good men oppressed, and patience amidst their miseries: That, by the bond of peace, they should retaine vnitie of spirit; And finally, that casting away the care of earthly easements, they should meekly indure pouertie, and worldly displeasures, that thus by their doctrine, and example of life, Christ might be glorified, the Church increased, and their Ministerie admired.

And surely the Apostles, and their successors, in all their trauailes ouer the face of the earth, thus vnder-taken by the commandment of their Master, so behaued themselues in all occurrences, but especially in this obseruancie of difference betweene politicall Government and Ecclesiasticall orders, that by this note onely they were acknowledged to bee the true Disciples and followers of their glorified Master. For they not onely Preached with puritie the euerlasting will of God (without intermingling of humane fancies) but also, in all places accustomed to teach; That vpon earth *Cæsars* (Kings) were to bee acknowledged next vnto God, and to be reuerenced before all other mortall men; They stiled them *their Lords*, payed them tribute, made intercession vnto God for their welfare; And vnto such as spake euill of the Magistrate, they threatned reuenge from aboue. From all worldly affaires, especially from the abuse of Armes, they abhorred; Knowing that the twofold sword of the Church was intrusted to saluation and regeneration, and not for destruction. So farre were they euen from imagination, to thinke it lawfull to disenthronize any King
or

or Potentate, though a most wicked one; either to *absolue* his people from their Othes of *Allegiance*, or to proue masteries with him about *Precedencies*. But rather they thought it a worke worthy their calling, by the space of two hundred and seuentie yeeres, to suffer most bitter and terrible persecutions, and those too rather to bee indured by stedfast faith in Christ Iesus, by zealous calling vpon his Name, and by glorious Martyrdome; then by rebellious impatiencie, and violent Meditation of requitall; And all this, not without admirable increase, and good successe to the Church of Christ.

*Sanguis marty-
rum semen Ec-
clesie.*

For in what Age was the face of the Church more amiable, or liker the head thereof, euen Christ Iesus, then when after his ascension, his Disciples (striving to fulfill his Testament; and their successors, treading in the very same footesteps) Preached faithfully and purely the Gospel through *Iudea*, *Samaria*, and *Palestine*? After that, when so glorious and conspicuous, as when with their fellow labourers, taking their Iournyes towards other Nations, but especially towards *Rome* (at that time the chiefe Seate of the Empire) and the bordering Regions, they imployed their times in dressing, in Planting and in watering the Lords vineyard, *viz.* From the time of *Linus* to *Siluester*, and *Cæsar Constantine* by the space of two hundred and fiftie yeeres, vnder most vn sufferable Persecutions, euen to the losse of their liues and dearest bloods?

But as soone as *Constantine* by the diuine prouidence had giuen peace to the afflicted Churches, and that the Bishops being deliuered from their lurking corners, from Vaults and from dennes, wherein during
B 3 the

the time of Persecution they had safe conducted their bodies, then, I say, shamed they not to giue themselves ouer to the delights of the world, to vnprofitable idlenesse: to liue a pleasurable life; to degenerate from the wayes of their predecessors, through neglect of Gods word, being wholly seduced with carnall affections. Then began they to giue coulorable clothing to the doctrine of Christ and his Apostles, by *Canons*, *Decretals*, and *Ceremonies*: Then began they to deuise new appellations of *Dignitie*: To *preferre* one Church before all other, and finally blushed not to confound all orders both Ciuill and Ecclesiasticall. Whereupon presently followed so vniuersall a confusion of Doctrine, Discipline and Order, that they no longer seemed to represent the late Pastours of the Lords flocke, but rauening Wolues; not Priests but blasphemers; not Doctors but deiectors of soules from the sweete aspect of the face of God.

For surely, they did not onely obscure in a wonderful maner the sinceritie of the Christian doctrine by their humane traditions; gaue it so great a scandall by superstitious impietie, and heathenish inuocation of Soules departed; and so wickedly polluted it with blasphemous Idolatrie; But all honestie and discipline being troden vnderfooote, in all seducement and oppression of veritie, they spent their whole dayes in Sodomiticall abuses, in Wantonnesse, in Luxurie, in Ribaldrie, in Whoring, in Sacrilege, in Contention, in Necromancie, in Charmes, in Homicide, and such like transgressions: And that more is, being possessed with a diabolical affectation of Gouvernement & pride, cleane contrarie to the Diuine commandement, they began
to


to busie themselves in secular affaires; to withdrawe their faiths from the subiection of Kings, to vsurpe vpon other mens patrimonies; to thrust in their crooked Syckles (and that at aduenture) into another mans Haruest; to arrogate both Presences; to challenge the iurisdiction of both Swords; to tollerate no equall, much lesse no Superiour; to defraude one of his right, an other of his Honour; to giue Law to Kings, and prescribe them ordinances; basely to esteeme of Emperours, as if they reigned at will; to accurse them and murder them; To set Princes together by the eares; to sow dissentions; to patronize factions; to absolute Subiects from their Othes of Allegiance; and finally by their nouell and slie Policies, to mooue them to vnlawfull Rebellions: So farre forth, that after they had once pleaded prescription in their incroachments, they more defaced the Maiestie of the Romane Empire, by their dissimulations, slaughters, warre, and such varieties of wickednesses, then any forraigne or barbarous enemy could haue done by the Sword or violence.

For to let passe the Empire of the East, ruinated by the cunning and slie cariage of the *Romane Bishops*, the *Grecians* being first expelled *Italy* by the *Lombards*, and presently (they againe being oppressed by the French) called in against *Astulphus* King of the *Lombards*, for calling vpon *Steuens* the second for his Subsidy money: Euery man that is any thing seene in Historie, knoweth (the Romane Empire being by the prowes of *Charles* the Great, transferred from the *Grecians* to the *Germanes*) how the Emperours of *Germanie* haue bene harried by the incredible subtilties and combinations

nations of the *Romane Bishops*; wearied with most lamentable warres, and lastly the goodly and most flourishing forces of the Empire by their vngodlinesse diuinited, impouerished, and wasted.

Surely the remembrance of these times are so distastfull and lamentable, that I had rather wash them out with teares, then aggrauate them by speech: But since our Pen is fallen into repetition thereof, I perswade my selfe, that it shall proue neither a digression from my proiect, neither impertinent from the point of our Argument, to Paint out in most liuely colours, what hath bene the humilitie, obseruancie, loyaltie & obedience of the *Roman Bishops* manifested throughout all Ages, since the dayes of the aforesaid *Charles* towards the most worthy *Germane* Emperors, their very good Lords and especiall benefactors.

Charles the Great.

 O begin therefore with the *Frenchmen*, who first transferred the Empire from the *Grecians* to the *Germanes*: who liueth so ignorant, that knoweth not, with what immunities and honourable indowments they adorned the *Romane Clergie*? First, *Charles* surnamed the *Great*, to his eternall renowne deliuered that Sea, being most grievously laide vnto by *Desiderius* King of the *Lombards*, to the vtter confusion of his Armie. Against *Herisigus* Duke of *Benovent*, he likewise defended his frontiers: And presently after

after that, hee restored *Leo* the third to his Sea, at *Baryona*, being expelled from *Rome* by the faction of his aduersaries.

Lewes surnamed Pius.

This man was Emperour in the yeere of Christ eight hundred and fourtecne, at what time Egbricht gouerned the West Saxons, and first called our Countrey Anglia.



EWES succeeding his father *Charles* (as the *Romane Chronicles* record) with no lesse liberalitie, granted vnto the *Romane Bishops* and his successours, the Citie of *Rome* together with his Dukedome: and defended the iurisdiction and dignitie thereof, euen to the imputation of superstition.

Notwithstanding, neither the remembrance of the good seruices of the father, nor the vertues of the sonne, could so farre forth wey with *Gregorie* the third, as to suppress, much lesse to mitigate his diuinish intendments once conceiued against this *Lewes*. For the Warre being on foote betweene *Lewes* and his sonnes; He (as it behoued an Apostolicall Bishop) sought not to quench the fire of this vnkindnesse betweene father and child, but being sent by *Lewes* into the Campe of his sonnes to capitulate the Peace, with condition to returne againe vnto the Emperour; revolting from *Lewes*, he remained with his sonnes, and like a true Apostata, abetted and complotted this vn-
C naturall

naturall diffension; so farre forth, that the father was taken, and being committed to most severe imprisonment, with his yonger sonne was finally thrust into the Monasterie of *Suessons*. Behold here a most strange precedent of ingratitude in children against their dearest Parents, and the detestable impietie of a Bishop against a most innocent Emperour; both equally guilty of like periurie and disloyaltie.

From that time, although the Royal Diademe continued for some certaine Ages in the posteritie of *Lewes*, neuerthelesse their hellish humors did no more spare the issue, then in former time it compassionated the Parent. And no maruaile, for this was the onely marke that they shotte at, that hauing once shaken off the right which the Emperour pretended in the confirmation of Bishops, they might with more securitie euer after haue meanes to ouertop them in greatnesse. Which their most prouident proiect was long a hatching, neither could it bee deliuered to discouerie, before the yeere eight hundred ninetie fve. At what time *Charles* the Groffe departing out of *Italy* to warre vpon the *Normans*, who at that time miserably infected the Sea-coasts of *France*; *Hadrian* the third layed hold vpon this opportunitie, and in the very beginning of his Pontificie, made his complaint vnto the Senate and people of *Rome*; That in the Election of Bishops, the Imperiall authoritie was not to be stood vpon, but that the Suffrages of the Clergie and the people ought alwayes to be free.

By this Decree he disseysed the Emperours of their whole right, which but lately they possessed both vpon

on the Bishops and the Citie; Thereby pointing out to his successors a course how to attempt proiects of higher nature in future ages.

And surely from those times, what vpon the deficiency of the issue of *Charles* the Great, which had most fortunately Governed the Empire for the space of one hundred and odde yeeres: and what in regard of that most horrible Schisme proceeding from that Chaire of pestilence, managed betweene the Bishops themselves by mutuall Murders, Poysonings, and all other kind of enormities, their continued machinations against the Emperours some-deale ceased; vntill they reassumed a new occasion of plotting & reiterating their former courses against *Otho* the first, Emperour of *Germanie*.

Otho the Great.

He was chosen Emperour in the yeere nine hundred thirtie and sixe. In England reigned Adelstan.



Or at what time, in the Reigne of *Otho*, *John* the thirteenth, Noble in trueth by Birth, but most base in conuersation, Governed the Romish Sea, and polluted *Peters* Chaire with ryot, gaming, pandarisme and Women, &c. At that very same instant likewise *Berengarius* Duke of *Lombardie*, amongst many other Cities, forbore not to presse hard vpon the Citie of *Rome* also. The Cardinals grew discontented, aswell at the Popes Epicurisme,

risine, as at *Berengarius* his Tyrannie. Two of them more agrieved then the rest (whether vpon scruple of conscience, or in remembrance of the greatnesse of the Romane name, or in hatred of the *Pope*) resolved to pray in aide of *Otho*, a Prince of that time much celebrated for his vertues amongst the *Loriners*, the *French*, the *Hungarish*, the *Danes*, and all the other barbarous people, vnder his obedience throughout that part of the world.

Whereupon, calling some others to Councell, by letters and messages they solícite *Otho*, that he would vouchsafe to assist the declining estate of the Church and Common-wealth: That hee would repress the Tyrannie of *Berengarius* cruelly raging vpon the Christian people: And that he would not let, to deliuer the Church from so fell and impure a beast. The *Bishop* comming to the knowledge of these passages, first cut off three of his fingers, that indited the Letters, and then slit his Chancellors nose, for giuing approbation thereunto. But *Otho*, who thought it not fitte to leaue the Church succourlesse in times of danger, hauing amassed all necessaries for warfare, marcheth into *Italy* with fiftie thousand Souldiers. Expelleth both *Berengarius* and his sonne *Adelbert*: then speedeth towards *Rome*. Where arriued, although the inhumane cruelties of the *Bishoppe* were not vknowne to his Maiestie: Yet in reuerence of the Apostolicke Sea, at first hee decreed no hard or vnbeseeeming censure against him, but causing all things that had beene iniuriously taken from him to bee restored, hee presented him moreouer with great masses of Gold, Siluer and Iewels. And appointing him a time
of

of conference; secretly and friendly hee repeated what he knew of his fore passed offences, wishing him thereafter to abstaine from so grosse and foule enormities; To leade a thriftie life; to bee an ornament, and not a dishonour to the Church; That integritie of life was no lesse commendable in a Churchman, then Artes and learning.

For the present, the *Pope* protesteth great hopes of amendment: The Emperour reioyceth thereat, and leauing *Rome* iournieth towards *Papia*, there minding to Winter, but withall exacteth a solemne Oath from the *Bishoppe* taken vpon the body of Saint *Peter*; THAT IN HIS ABSENCE HE SHOVLÐ NO WAY BE ASSISTING TO *BERENGARIUS*, NOR HIS SONNE. The Emperour had scarce left the Gates of *Rome*, but the *Bishop* returning to his wonted inclination, not onely followeth his pleasures, his Whoredomes, his Ryottes, his poysonings, and all other mischiefes, of like nature; but also hauing forgotten his plighted faith to the Emperour, reuoketh *Adelbert* from *Fraxineto*, whether hee had fled out of *Italy* to the *Saracens*, and promiseth him his vtmost assistance against the Emperour: Hee dispatcheth also his Legats to make like complaint against him at *Constantinople*.

The Emperour, vnto whome such grosse and wilfull periurie seemed more then wonderfull, vpon the first intelligence thereof, thought it not fitte rashly to listen thereunto, but dispatcheth certaine of his Seruaunts to *Rome* to learne the certaintie of the businessse.

Vpon their returne, and iustification of these, and more vile indignities, the Emperor (not vniustly moued to displeasure) suddenly hasteth towards *Rome*: where pitching his tents hard vnder the walles (*John* and *Adelbert* being fled into *Campania*) he is most honorably receiued into the City by the Inhabitants. Vnto him they promise faith and loyalty, and sweare thereafter neuer to elect a Pope without the consent of the Emperor *Otho*, *Cesar*, *Augustus*, and his Sonne *Otho*.

John being thus escaped; and for feare of *Cesar* lurking in *Campania* in woods and corners; after three daies, at the instance both of the Clergie and the people (desiring a Commission to enquire vpon the life and conuersation of *John*) the Emperor agreeth, and proclaimeth a Councell; whereunto he calleth all the Bishops and Abbots of *Italie*, such as he knew to bee men of integrity, honest, and zealous.

Who appearing vpon the day prescribed, although his abominable life was such, that euen by the generall opinion of the Councell, it could not but be deciphered by the remotest Nations, yet this most vertuous Emperor, tooke order that they should not proceed to any rash Iudgement, but to determine all accusations with mildnesse of mind and deliberate advice.

Whereupon with the Archbishops of *Liguria*, *Tuscanie*, *Saxonie* and *France*, he dispatcheth his letters vnto *John*, reciting therein the cause and maner of his accusation: not forbearing to intreat him to make his personall appearance, to say for himselfe against his accusers.

But he returning for answer; that it should easilie appeare

peare, what slight esteeme he made of that Councell; And that, he would suddenly proceed to *Excommunication*, in case they presumed to elect *Any* other: the Emperor in a most solemne Oration intimateth to the Councell, his periuries towards himselfe, and his dishonest conuersation towards the whole Christian world.

Vpon hearing wherof, with one consent the Councell declared this Apostata *John* for his euill life to be worthislie deprived: And *Leo* chiefe Secretary of the *Romane* Church was chosen to succeed him.

In the interim wherof, the Emperor not to be burdensome vnto the State of *Rome*, had dismissed many of those companies of Souldiers which at first hee had brought with him into *Italie*. Which comming vnto the vnderstanding of this reprobate Bishop, who full well was acquainted with the disloyall and mutable humours of the Italian Nation, sendeth his espials to *Rome*, with exhortations to the people to attempt a surprize vpon the Emperor and his weake companies; for which their good seruice he promisseth to reward them with all the Treasures of the Church and *Saint Peter*.

The Romans being hereunto encouraged, partly by the weaknesse of *Cesars* army, and partly with the conceit of these *Golden mountaines*, arise, and at the sound of a Trumpet charge vpon the Emperor.

He maketh a stand vpon the *Bridge of Tiber*, and there with his fearelesse and old Trained companies, valiantly receiue the charge: The Romanes receiue the iust reward of their trechery: for being routed, and put to flight, neither sanctuary, nor vnsanctuary could warrant

warrant any one mans life ; the fury of the Souldiers slew the periurd, as well at the Altar, as in the Shambles.

When this was done, *Cesar* stood in good hope, that after so great a punishment, the Romanes would proue afterwards to be of more quiet and aduised dispositions, and in this conceit, he hastneth to *Spoletum*, the place of *Adelberts* rendezuou.

Vpon which absence *John* betaking him to his wits, through the mediation of certaine good-wenches, heretofore of his ancient acquaintance, so worketh with many of the Roman gentry, that *John* is receiued into the City; and *Leo* with much labour escaping their hands, flieth vnto the Emperor.

The deposement of *Leo*, and the cruelty of *John*, which he had already inflicted vpon some few, being known; *Cesar* repaireth his Army, with intention to be revenged vpon the Romans, as well for the iniury offered to his own person, as for the wrong in deposing a Bishop of his owne institution.

In midst of which intendment, by the iudgement of Almighty God, meaning to make this *John* an exemplary president to the world of his most iust indignation, it came to passe, that he died a most strange kind of death.

For when vpon a certain night without the walles of the City, hee was sporting himselfe with an other mans wife, the diuell gaue him such a knocke on the Temples, saith *Luitprandus* of *Ticine*, that within eight daies he died of the wound.

Other write, that he was wounded by the womans husband; and so gaue vp his impure soule to the diuell
his

*Plati. in the
life of John xij.*

his master, whom he had long serued.

But death gaue no surcease to the seditions first occasioned by this monster. For the Romans, in place of the deceased, set vp *Benedict* the fist, and afterwards required *Confirmation* from the Emperor, then residing at *Spoletum*.

The Emperor disallowing the Election, disdainfully dismissed the Romans, little mistrusting any such welcome: and by fire and sword wasting all things about the City, finally compelled them, that expulping (or rather yeelding vp) *Benedict*, they should accept of *Leo*: binding them by Oth, that they should not presume to alter any thing, which he had set down for the Churches gouernment.

Hereupon *Leo* being restored to his See at *Barionea*, and over wearied with the disloyall humours of the Roman people, retransferred the whole Authority of chosing the Roman Bishops from the Clergy and people of *Rome*, vnto the Emperor; as it is set downe. *distinct. 6. c. in Synodo.*

*Platina in the
life of Benedict
the fist.
See also Krant-
zins lib. 4. cap. 9.*

And *Otho*, having in this maner marshalled his affaires, returned into *Germanie*, taking *Benedict* with him; who not long after through griefe of mind, being committed to the safe custody of *Adaldag*, *Othoes* Chancellor, and Archbishop of *Hamburg*, died at *Hamburg*, and there lieth buried in the Cathedrall Church.

D

32 Otho

Otho the third.

He raigned in the yeere of Christ 984. about the dayes of Etheldred.

*Xueller. gene-
ral 34 Plat. in
vita Gregorij
V. Cuspinian &
Theod. de Nyem
in the life of
Otho the third.*

SOME few yeeres after, as *Otho* succeeded his Grandfather in the Empire: so did hee likewise in the contentions of the Bishops. For when as *Iohn* the xvij. being dead, by the right of Election, inuested vpon him by the donation of *Leo* the viij, to his predecessor *Otho* the great, hee had chosen *Gregorie* the v. for Pope; *Crescentius* and the people stomacking that a man of the German nation should be aduanced to be their Bishop, and him also chosen by the sole authority of the Emperor, they resolved to depose him; and in his place they substituted, *Iohn* the xvij. of that name, first Bishop of *Placentia*, a man well stored with coyn, and a great Scholler.

Gregorie maketh his repaire into *Germanie* to the Emperor, and there vnfoldng his hard vsage, so prouoked the Emperor, that he besiegeth the City, and pressed it so closely, that the people almost hunger starued opened their Gates, and receiued his Maiesty.

Being now in possession, and vnderstanding, that like power by warrant of Gods word, was bequeathed him ouer a wicked Bishop, as ouer a common theefe; at first he gaue commandement that the eies of the captiue Bishop should be put out, the fingers of both his hands to be cut off, and then clothed in vile attire, with his stumps and feet manacled, to be set vpon an Asse, so to be conueyed through the City, and finally

to

to be thrown headlong from the rocke *Tarpeia*.

Crescentius the Consul hee also caused to be mounted vpon a base Beast, his face towards his taile, his nose and eares to be cut off, so to be a common spectacle to all beholders, and lastly to be hanged vpon the common Gallowes in sight of the City walles.

Thus hauing wrecked his iust indignation vpon his aduersaries, he not only restored *Gregorie*, the xj. moneth after his depofall to his pristinate dignity: But also this good and most excellent Emperor, left an example to his successors, that these proud Churchmen were not to be managed by lenity and mildnesse, but to be curbed by roughnesse and seuerity. For it was the receiued opinion of that age, that looke which of the *Cesars* shewed himselfe to be of more milde disposition, then some others; so much the more wantonlike would they dally with his lenity, and more basely prosecute him with railings, & foule-mouthed reproches; As by that which followeth, I will clearly make manifest vnto you.

Henricus Niger.

Hee ruled Anno Christi. 1039. In England Harold Harefoot.



His seuerity of *Otho*, last before spoken off in punishing the treason of *Iohn*, for some certaine time so terrified the Bishops, that vntill the smart was forgotten, openly they attempted,

*cardinal Benno
of the l. se and
gests of Hilde-
brand.*

attempted nothing against the Maiesty of the sacred Empire. But no sooner had *Benedict* the xi. by Saticall and magicall Inchantment leaped into the place, but by how much his skil and confidence in that profession was remarqueable, by so much the more insolent was his cariage in the Popedome.

For no looner was *Conradus*, (a most faithfull steward of the Law and Religion, Emperor of Romans, alwaies *Augustus*) gathered to his fathers; but this firebrand going to counsell with his minion *Laurentius*, and other his fauorits; bendeth his studies, how hee might dispossesse *Henric* the sonne of *Conrade* from his hereditary succession to the Crowne of the Empire; and disturbe the peace of the Church with Schisme and dissension.

To the effecting of which stratageme, hee sendeth the Crowne of the Romane Empire vnto *Peter* King of *Hungarie*, with this Motto vnder written.

Petra dedit Romam Petro: tibi Papa Coronam.

The Rocke gaue *Peter* Rome: to thee the Pope this Crowne.

But the Emperour, vnder the leading of *Godfrey* Duke of *Lorain*, a most excellent Souldier, and faithfull seruitor, confronted *Peter*, tooke him Prisoner; and further, meaning to repay *Theophilact* the ringleader vnto so dangerous a Schisme, according to his deserts, set forward for *Rome*. Vpon brute whereof, *Theophilact*, (alias *Benedict* the ninth) stroken in remorse of conscience, and amazed with terroure, bartered the Papacie to one of his Companions, the Archpriest of *Saint Iohns de Porta latina*, the Master of *Hildebrand*, for the Summe of one thousand and fiue hundred pounds.

pounds. Who ascending the Seate by the staires of such abominable iniquitie, by changing his Name, was thenceforth stiled, *Gregorie* the sixt.

Now is the Cup brimfull; and the Papacie so managed, that all good men being either reiected or oppressed, euery other party, as he was caried away by ambition, or inabled for briberie, cast to lay hold-fast vpon this so high a step of Dignitie; more entring like theeues and robbers by the windowe, then by the doore. So that in these dayes (besides the Archpriest *John Gratian*) ascended also into this Seate of iniquities; *John* Bishop of *Sauoy* who (changing his Name) was otherwise nominated *Siluester* the third. Thus was the Roman Church ren into diuers factions: Three Popes appeared at one instant, viz. *Benedict* the ninth, *Siluester* the third, and *Gregorie* the sixt, and euery one claimeth lawfull succession in *Peters* Chaire, and pleadeth possession. Where is now the Church? Who is this head? Who shall now stand vp to arbitrate so difficult a controuersie? None is now to be seene but the Emperour; And him, without question, surnamed *Niger*, God himselfe stirred vp (hauing set *Germanie* in good order) with an Armie to trauaile into *Italy*, where calling a Councell, he inforceth *Theophilact* to flie: Hee imprisoned *Gregorie*, and afterward with *Hildebrand*, exiled him into *Germanie*. The Bishop of *Sauoy* he dispatched to his charge; and in their places consecrated *Syndoger* Bishop of *Bamberg*, otherwise called *Clement* the second. Of whom he receiued the inauguration of the Imperiall Crowne, and then inforced the Romans to take an Oath: That thereafter they should neuer presume to meddle with the Election of a Romane Bishop, without

Bemo. Platin
the life of *Siluester*
the third
and *Gregorie*
the sixt.

out expresse Commission first obtained from the Emperour.

For his most excellent Maiestie did well foresee, that in those times the world was giuen to so much licentious libertie, that euery factious and Potent companion, though most ignoble, would not sticke to arrogate vnto himselfe that so eminent a dignitie, by corruption and vnderhand-courses, which by the strict commandement of God, was not to be bestowed vpon any liuing creature, saue him who for learning and sanctitie of life, ought worthily to bee preferred therevnto.

This vsage now grew vnto so inueterate a custome, that euery sedicious and wicked varlet presumed, that hee might without scruple of conscience vsurpe vpon Saint Peters Chaire; As did *Damasus* the second, by birth a *Bauarian*. This man hauing gotten poyson for his purpose, slue *Clement*, and laboured by villanie to attaine to that promotion, which whilom was accustomed to bee bestowed onely vpon vertue. But God, the most iust reuenger of such wickednesse preuented him, and the three and twentie day after his vsurped installment, sent him to accompanie the dead in the place of darkenesse.

☛ *Henricus*

☛ *Henricus quartus.*

He reigned in the yeere of Christ 1056. in Germanie. In England Edward the Confessor.



Lbeit, that euen hitherto, from the dayes of *Charlemaine*, the Romane Bishops being generally possessed with the spirit of Supremacie, by sleights and deuises, did continually oppose themselves against the Maiesty of the Empire, and left no practise vnattempted, that might weaken or discountenance the Emperors soueraignty; that so they might dispose of all things at their pleasures without all feare of controlment: yet was it not the will of Almighty God, to suffer them as yet totally to cast off the yoke of duty, by warrant of Holy writ inuested vpon Princes and great personages placed in Authority. But what can humane wisdom plead in search of Gods purposes? *perdere quos vult Iupiter, & hos dementat*: For now the malice, impiety and treason of the Roman Clergy, together with their diabolicall ambition, especially vnder that figuratiue Dragon (*Gregorie* the seuenth) grew like a violent tempest so outrageous and exorbitant, that those times may truly be recorded to be the daies, which vtterly razed, blemished, and wounded the Maiesty of this famous empire with the fatall ruine of glory and Honor.

For this mischieuous monster, not contented to haue poisoned six Bishops, and to haue deposed his Master *Alexander*, for imploring assistance from the
Emperor,

Emperor; Neither mindfull of the fauours which *Henric* (surnamed *Niger*) had afforded him, in curteously dismissing him from perpetuall Imprisonment, seperated from the company and sight of all mortall creatures, whereinto (as we told you before) he had beene condemned with *Gregorie* the sixt: At what time, the *Normans* raged through *Apulia*, *Calabria* and *Campania*, partly relying vpon the great wealth of *Matilda*, a most potent woman in those daies, and partly animated to see the Empire distracted with most dangerous wars raised by the warlike Nation of the *Saxons* against the Emperor, scarce three yere seated in his gouernment; together with the reuolt of the Germane Bishops whom the Impostor our perpetuall aduersary had seduced from the seruice of their Master: Then I say, this man first of all other, against the custom of his predecessors, absolutely vsurped vpon the Papacy, without all consent of the Emperor, before that time alwaies accustomed to be mediated in the Election of these Bishops.

And in future; to preuent the residue of the Bishops and Abbots from seeking their confirmations at the Emperors hands, he set forth a decree vnder pain of Excommunication; That hee had not onlie power in heauen to bind and to loose, but also that he had plenitude of iurisdiction in Earth, to take away, and to giue Empires, Kingdomes and Principalities. Then began he impudently to boast: to vsurpe vpon the temporall and Supreme iurisdiction, and that by a law of his own coyning: to esteeme of Kings and Emperors as tenants at will: to imprison *Cesars* Ambassadors opposing against his insolencies, & finally leading them through

Rome

Of this Matilda, whence and what she was, see Kyantzjus lib. 5. Saxon.

Formula decreti extat. C. si quis deinceps.

Rome in ignominious manner, to expell them the city.

Henric, albeit he were infinitely perplexed with the war of *Saxonie*, yet knowing that this nouell and vniuersal pertinacie of the Bishop, was not to be forgotten, calleth a Councell at *Wormes*; wherein, audience being giuen to the Ambassadors, which came from Rome, and *Hildebrands* disloyall Letters being read; besides the *Saxons*, all the German and French Bishops, made a Decree; That sithence Pope *Hildebrand* a fugitiue Monke first of all other incroched vpon the Papacie without the good liking or priuity of the Romane Emperor, constituted of God to be his Soueraigne Lord, and that, contrarie to the Custome of his Predecessors, contrarie to law, and contrarie to his oth of instalment: And moreouer had vsurped vpon both iurisdctions, the temporall and Ecclesiasticall, as the Decij and worshippers of false Gods were accustomed to doe: That ipso facto he was deposed from his Bishoprick; for sheep were no longer to be intrusted to the keeping of such a woluish Shepheard.

One *Rowlanda* Clerke of *Parma*, was dispatched to Rome with letters containing the sentence of the Councell: In whose Name he was commanded to interdict *Gregorie* from all Ecclesiasticall Function; and moreouer to enioyn the Cardinals, that making choice of another for Bishop, they should present him to the Emperor.

In like maner, *Cesar* himselfe dateth his Letters vnto *Hildebrand*, to the Clergy, and the Roman people: commanding according to the Iniunction of the Councell; That himselfe should returne to a priuate life; and That, they forsaking *Hildebrand*, according to their accustomed Priuiledges should proceede to the

E

election

election of a New Pastor.

*Vide formulam
abrogationis
apud Platin. in
vita Gregorij. 7.
Bern.*

At the receit of this newes, *Hildebrand* became not so much lenified, as furiously exasperated, and insolently imboldned. For, whereas before he had Excommunicated but some certaine of the Emperors familiars, whose aduice he presumed *Cesar* to haue vsed in these his proceedings: now presumeth hee by nouell president to Excommunicate *Cesar* himselfe in a hellish conuenticle, against the order of Christian piety, ratified by the sacred Canons of Holy writ; Him, I say he prescribeth, depriueth of all kingly Authority, dispoileth of his Kingdom, and absolueth his Subiects from their oths of obedience.

Behold, he was no sooner risen from the Seat wherein he sat to Excommunicate *Cesar*, but the Chaire being lately made of strong and new timber, suddenly by the prouidence of God in most terrible manner was rent into a thousand shatters: manifestly foreshewing, That by that rash and vnaduised Excommunication, this cruell Scismaticke should proue the Author of a most fearefull diuision in the Church of God.

And surely these were neither blind nor idle predictions. For the Princes and German Bishops, taking notice of the Curse, some vpon a vaine superstition, some in hope of bettering their estates, and others in remembrance of their ancient hatred against *Henrie*, at the next assembly of the States, threatening a Reuolt, vnlesse he would suppliantly desire forgiveness of the Pope (now resolved to come into *Germanie*) brought the controuersie vnto so narrow a pinch, and his Maiesty into such mistrusts of despaire, with the dispoiling him of his reall possession, That he was fain

to

to promise the Princes, that hee would goe vnto the Pope, and personally craue absolution at his foot.

Wherupon putting off his regall habiliments, with his wife and yong sonne barefooted, and clothed in canuasse, being made a spectacle for Angells and men to admire at, in a most bitter winter, and a most dangerous kind of trauell, commeth to *Canusium* where the Pope then resided: There before the gates of the City fasting and sutor-like from morning till euentide, he danceth attendance: Meane while *Hildebrand* within, amongst whores and shauelings laugheth him to scorne. Three daies he patiently indureth this lamentable affliction, desiring admittance. He is denied. At three daies end instancing admittance with greater importunacie, It is answered; *That his Holinesse is not yet at leysure to attend his suit.* *Henrie* by patience making a vertue of necessity (In that he could not be admitted into the City) contenteth himself to abide in the Suburbs, but not without many incommodious greouances. For the wether was sharpe, and all places appeared hoary with frost.

At last, after his incessant three-daies petitioning, and deniall, at the instance of *Maud* the Countesse of *Adelans* Earle of *Sauore*, and the *Abbot of Cluniois*, he is admitted vnto presence.

Vpon the fourth day in signe of vnfeined penitency, heresigned his Crowne and imperiall Ensignes, and maketh a protestation that hee were vnworthy to enioy the Title of an Emperour, if he should againe commit the like offences against the Roman Sea, as formerly he had done.

E 2

For

*Berno.
Nauclerus ge-
neratione 36.
Vrpergensis.
Platina in loco
ante citato.*

For all this, this inexorable Prelat would neither pardon nor absolue him, vnlesse he would put in good securitie, that according vnto his Popish pleasure he would expiate the offence in a Councell, and be forth comming at euerie day and place appointed, (there the Pope being Iudg^e) to answer vnto all accusations without once plotting in his thoughts anie scruple of reuenge.

2. Yea after his purgation, and reconciliation, either to retain, or forsake his kingdom, if the Pope thought it so fitting

3. Thurdlie, that before the Examination of his Cause, he should not presume to weare anie Kinglie habit, neither haue borne before him anie Imperiall ensignes, That hee should not meddle in state gouernment, nor exact anie oth of allegiance vpon his vassalls.

The Pope will
deale surely.

Vpon promise of performance, and future obedience, the attonement is now at length confirmed as well by Oth as Indenture, and Henrie absolved.

Now obserue I beseech you, the restless humours of attainted consciences. The Court of shauelings, deep polititians, men of profound reaches; and admirable well seen in the principles of Machiuell, and carefull aswell to preuent future blowes, as to oppose against present perils, either reuoluing in their far reaching wits, or suspecting in their seared consciences, that Henrie beeing sure seated in a peaceable estate, could not possibly digest so vilanous an indignity, nor the world allow of so base a tiranny; fall againe to their old plots, but a new Counsell; viz. how they might vtterly dispossesse Henrie of his Empire. Rodulph Duke of Swenia, Henries brother in law, is presented with a golden Crowne, thus inscribed.

Petra

Petra dedit Petro, Petrus diadema Rodulpho:

And withall the Bishops of *Magunce* and *Colen* are commanded, that (rebellling against Henrie) they shold set it vpon Rodulphs head, and asist him therein to the vtmost of their forces. Was it for Loue, or Honor may the world dispute, that the Pope became thus bountifull of an other mans patrimony, to bestow it vpon Rodulph? Or doth any History make mention that Rodulph was a more kinde Son to the Church, then Henrie? Beleeue me, the Pope did neither vpon any such respects, it was far from his imagination. But this was the windlace of all: if Henrie must liue in peace, Henrie must seek reuenge: but if the Duke of *Swenia* find him play on one side, *Romandiola* shall be secured on the other side. Let Rodulph or Henrie sinke or swim, meane while *res nostre tutiores redduntur*, that is, the Court of Rome may securely swagger; If Henrie haue the better, yet shall he be much the weaker: if Henrie haue the worfe, then all the care is taken, for Rodulph is infinitely beholding vnto vs. And be it as be may: nether party (being potent Princes) shall haue cause to laugh at their bargain; let time try the sequell; and so it hapned. O the blind folly of ambition.

For albeit that Rodulph was the Emperors sworne liege-man, his brother in law by mariage, indowed with the Dukedom of *Swenia* after his decease, and honored with many other fauours: notwithstanding being seduced by the faire and false protestations of the Bishops, and borne out by his own greatnesse and the succours of *Saxonie*, he inuadeth the Empire, and rebelliously to his vtmost power moueth war against his Soueraigne master.

E 3

Cesar.

Cesar by the admonishment of the Bishop of *Argentine*, seeing the danger arising from all parts, leueth his people, affronteth *Rodolph*, and setteth all vpon the hazard of a battell. The issue whereof was this, That the *Pope* vpon mistrust of the worst, commanded both parties to Peace, and that *Henrie* should expect his sentence at the Synode, which shortly hee would proclaime to be held in *Germanie*. Which limitation, when *Henrie* stomacked, vpon protestation that hee would suffer no Assembly to bee holden in *Germanie*, vnlesse *Rodolph* were first remooued: The *Pope* (rather then hee would disharten *Rodolph* by finall Peace) reneweth the Excommunication, and sendeth forth his Mandates full stuffed with hellish furie. *Henrie* is nothing abashed, but the third time giueth the battell at *Elisrum* of *Misia*, and there ouerthroweth his enemy. This came to passe in the yeere 1080. the Ides of October.

The forme of
the Curse is ex-
tant in Platina.

Vrsberg. fol. 238
doth witness
this conference
betweene the
King and the
Bishops.

Rodolph being grievously wounded, and from the field conueied to *Merseburg*, intreateth the Bishops and the Leaders of his people to compeer before him. Where being assembled, *Rodolph* feeling death seazing vpon him, stretched forth his right hand and said: *My Lords, this is the hand with which I plighted my faith to my Lord Henrie. At your intreaties, thus, and thus many times hath it vnfortunately fought against him: Returne yec, and make good your first Othes to the King: I am to depart to my fathers.*

See the iudgement of God.

Rodolph being vanquished, and *Germanie* by his death resonably well quieted, *Henrie* neither forgetting *Hildebrands* iniuries; neither hauing his spirits so peaceably affected, but that hee could call to remembrance,

brance, how the *Pope* had twise Excommunicated him; how for three dayes space being a most suppliant Petitioner in a very cold season, he could attaine no reconciliation; As also, that cunningly hee had assisted his enemy, euen the competitor of his Kingdome, proclaimeth a Synod of the Bishops of *Italy*, *Lombardy*, and *Germanie*, to bee celebrated at *Brixia* a Citie of *Norica*.

Where being assembled, and the Acts of *Hildebrand* examined, with one consent they promulge this suffrage.

For that it is apparently knowne, that *Hildebrand* was not Elected of God, but most impudently by fraud and bribery, made his owne way to the Papall dignitie: And therein being seated, hath subuerted all the Orders of the Church, disquieted the whole Christian world; intended the death both of body and soule, to a most peaceable and Catholicke King; defended a periurd Prince, and amongst the peaceable, sowed seedes of discord, &c. Wee here Congregated by the Grace of God, and assisted by the Legats and letters of nineteene Bishops, assembled against the foresaid *Hildebrand* at *Mognuce* the eight day of Pentecost, doe canonically giue iudgement against the said *Hildebrand*, That he is to bee deposed and expelled, for vnadvisedly Preaching of Sacriledges and factions, defending Periuries and Scandals; Abolliuer of Dreames and diuinations, a notorious Necromancer; a man possessed with an vncleane spirit; And therefore an Apostata from the true faith: And vnlesse vpon the receite of this our iudgement, hee shall voluntarily resigne the Seate, we doe finally Accurse him.

Abbas Vrsberg.

These busineses being thus dispatched, and *Germanie* quieted, in the yeer 1081. the Emperour iourneyeth

to.

to Rome, and pitching his Campe before the Castle of Saint *Peter*, hee chargeth the Romanes with so many assaults, that they are glad to pray for Peace, and to open their Gates. The Bishop with his followers retireth into the Bastile of *Adrian*: wherein being besieged, he worketh the Emperour more disquiet by craft and subtiltie, then the Emperour could doe him, by Mine or Engine. For as *Henrie* accustomed frequently to make his Orisons in Saint *Maries* in Mount *Auennine*, this Traitour suborned a certaine villaine, secretly to conuey vpon the Rafter of the Church, great and massiue stones; and so to dispose them, that as the Emperour should kneele at his Prayers, from aloft they should fall vpon his head, and dash out his braines.

As this villanous Regicide, the Minister of Popish iniquitie, was hastning his dissiagne, and labouring to fit this massie stone to the execution of his Treason, the stone fell down and drew this villaine downe withall: So that bruising the Table whereon it fell, supported with strong Treffels, it rested on the Pavement, and thereby the iudgement of God, dashed in pieces the carkise of this Trayterous workman. The Romanes vpon notice of the Treason, fastning a corde to one of his legges, for three dayes space dragged him along through the streetes of the Citie.

This failing, had the *Pope* so shallow a pate, as to carie about him but one string to his bow: Or was he so honest a man, that rather then hee would spare the blood of Christian people, hee would giue ouer his owne life, nay his Seate, for the fastie of many thousands? Obserue what followeth: To be sure, that neither *Germanie* should long breath in peace, now *Rodolph*

was

was gone; nor the Emperour bee secured in *Italy*; he turneth to the Art of diuerfion (a point of Warre well knowne amongst Souldiers) and stirreth vp the Saxons in his absence to create *Harman* Prince of *Lucelburg* in *Lorain*, Emperour at *Isleb.* by *Hercinia*: Who likewise by the prouidence of GOD at the siege of a certaine Castle, was miserably slaine by the fall of a stone cast from the battailement of the Wall by the hand of a sely woman.

Hee being gone, (the Romish Religion will still be dealing, rather then loose one iot of their reputes, if they cannot otherwise preuaile) this inhumane Tyrant thirdly stirred vp *Ecbert* Marques of *Saxonie*: and him also God predestinated to suffer condigne punishment for his Rebellion. For the fift yeere after, he was beset in a Mill neere *Brunswicke* by the Emperours Guard, and thete miserably slaine.

Once againe, *Hildebrand* flieth to his wits, and perceiving, that his stake in *Germanie* was cleane lost, Himselfe immured in a Bastill, where he could not allwayes continue, and that he had small reason to fall in to the sight of *Cesar*, hee dissembleth a parley, and during the conference Iudaslike forsaking his companie, in disguised habit flieth vnto *Salerne* amongst the *Normans*.

Cesar forthwith assembled a Senate of his Nobles and Bishops, according to the custome of his predecessors, gineth order for an Ecclesiasticall Diet: where *Hildebrand*, as a thiefe and a robber; a perfidious fugitive, a forsaker of the fold; a Traytor to the flocke, a debalker of Christian charitie, by the vniuersall consent of the Conuocation, is denounced and condemned.

F

In

Ab. J. r. sperg.
Helmoldus in
his 30. cap. of
the hist. of *Sclad*
Krantz, and in-
numerable o-
thers.

I hope the Ro-
manists of this
age are not be-
hind for shifts.
&c.

In his place is promoted *Guibert* Archbishop of *Ra- uenna*, a lover of Peace and Concord; a man learned and religious: By the consent of the Cleargie hee is Consecrated Bishop by the name of *Clement* the third, in the yeere of Christ 1084. This done, he Reinstall- leth *Cesar* and his spouse *Bertha*, and saluteth them *Aug-usti*, with the vniuersall applause of the people. As for *Hildebrand*, either through grieffe, or guiltinesse of conscience, he died in exile (as the saying is) *Ab aris & focus* in the Towne of *Salerno*.

But this firebrand of Warre and discord being ex- tinguished, the furie of the Prelates amongst them- selues was neuer the neere allayed; howbeit, thereby, the world enioyed peace; and *Germanie* her pristinate Maiestie.

For *Vrbán* (after *Victor* the second, a Bishop but of a fewe dayes standing) intruded vpon the Papacie at *Gurzburg* by the faction of *Hildebrand*; but especially by the money of *Matilda*, and the Armes of the *Normans*. Him the Emperour with the greater part of his Nobilitie accused of Irreligion, and denounced him in the number of the wicked. This fellow, notwith- standing that he had long wandered *sine lare, sine grege*, yet he so artificially finished the webbe begun by *Hil- debrand*, that instead of *Vrbánus*, the world stiled him *Turbánus*, yea, hee went far beyond his Schoolemaster *Hildebrand* in wit and villanie.

For, being not able any way to wrong *Henrie* by se- cret inuasion (Papists will doe nothing openly, or at least without pretext) he commandeth the Canons of that most pestilent knaue *Hildebrand*, to be confirmed and holden in force against him.

Then

Then draweth he into Parricide *Cunrade* the sonne of *Henry*, begotten on his first wife, by his fathers appoint- ment Viceroy of *Italy*. Vpon him he bestowed *Matilda* the wife of *Roger* the *Norman*, and by him expulseth *Clement* the third, Installed by the good liking and con- sent of his father.

But *Vrbán* and *Cunrade* being both quickly dispat- ched, *Paschal* the second loth to come behind his pre- decessors in Treacherie, and taking it for good Policie, to giue *Cesar* no breathing time to prouide against tempests, by the example of *Vrbán*, in a Synode at Rome reuiueth and ratifieth the Curse of *Gregorie* a- gainst the Emperour. Bulls are but words, and words are no weapons for *Popes*. Whereupon a quicker co- rasiue must bee applied: The other Sonne of *Henrie* (named also *Henrie*) the Princes of *Aquisgrane* must salute as *Cesar*, notwithstanding that already he had gi- uen his father his Oth of Loyaltie and true Leigeman.

O Lord! where shall not a man finde a man for blood, if promotion, or money, or Mariage be offered for recompence; but especially, if the man of blood may resort vnto a Churchman, and receiue absoluti- on for so cruell and vnpardonable mischiefes? Of such persons, and such stratagems, behold in those dayes the *Popes* made their especiall vses: they may be as bold in these times and in these points to pleade vniuersali- tie and antiquitie, as they did and doe for their Masse, and the residue of their trumperie. For yong *Henrie* is vp in parricidiall Rebellion: *Papa impellit*, saith the Hi- storie: and being borne out by the Armes of the *Sax- ons*, so caried the Warre, that this most valorous Em- perour, and stout reuenger of the impeached Maiestie

F 2 of

Benno.

*Ab Vesperis
Aue itimus.
N. ualer.*

Krantzius li. 5.
c. 22.

Vrsperg. fo. 262.

Helmold. in the

annals of Sclau-

ony. li. 1. ca. 32.

See more here
of D. Barlo 240.
at full.

of the Empire, being harried with continuall conflicts, and weary of his life through the perpetuall burden of Popish vexations, as he trauielled towards the Dyet of *Mogunce*, by treason vpon the high way, and that against a publique oth of safe conduct, was taken by his Sonne *Henrie*: then being degraded most vnwillingly of all imperiall ensignes, as also of his Crowne by the Bishops of *Mogunce*, *Colen* and *Wormes*; hee was committed to prison in the towne of *Leyge*: where pining to death through grieffe, he finished his troublesome daies in this most lamentable maner.

Notwithstanding such was the irreconcilable rancor of these charity-preaching fathers, that they not contented with these their most cruell turmoiles practised against his life; Hyena-like, with as barbarous bestiality they also preyed vpon his luelesse carkasse. For the body being already buried in the monastery of *Leyge*, they inforced the Bishop of the place to dig it vp againe, and without either honor to so great a personage, or reuerence to holy sepulture, they commanded it to bee cast amongst other carcases into a prophane place. The reason was grounded vpon one of their owne Canons: *Quibus uiris ecclesia non communicat, illis etiam nec mortuis communicare possit*. Repentance etiam in nouissima hora, and the reward of him that came into the vineyard at the cloze of the day, equalized to his, that began to worke in the dawning is of no force with them. It is scripture; and scripture, you know, is not sufficient for saluation. I quake in writing. Councils may controll it; the Church, *The Councils*; and who is the Church? the Pope. For otherwise it were folly to broche so many positions, as it doth, against

against law, conscience and sound diuinity, if it lay not in their fulnesse of power to doe and vndoe, say and vn say.

To conclude, at last, the body is conueyed in a coffin of stone from *Leyge* to *Spire*, and there also for fife yeeres space, it remained without the duties of Christian buriall.

See Krantzius
lib. 5.
Vrsperg. fo. 264.
H. Mutius
seuenteenth of
his Cronicles.

Henrie the fift.

Now let vs see, if *Henrie* the fift, seduced by the witchcraft of the false Pope, to vsurpe vpon the Empire of his father, experimented any other allowance of loue and fidelity from the Bishops; then did his ancestor.

Comming vnto Rome to be crowned with the imperiall Dyadem, he thought it much to concerne his honor, to demand restitution of his right in the confirmation of Bishops, Abbots and Prelates. The Pope forgetfull of all former fauours, doth stoutly deny the motion. From request they fall to blowes, insomuch that the Pope with certaine of his seruants was taken prisoner, and conueied to Mount *Soraacte*, now called Mount *Siluester*.

Paschal seeing no remedy, sent vnto the City for Notaries, and at length confirmeth and reuiueth to the vse of the Empire, the auncient prerogatiues claymed by the EMPEROVS in the Creation.

C. Adrian. c. an.
synodo 63. di.
stinet. c. inter
ros.

tion and Inuestiture of *Popes* and *Bishops*: and in requitall is honoured againe by the Emperour, with many rich presents.

A Pretent for
Periurie.

But such was the iust iudgement of God towards this *Henrie*; that as he obserued not faith towards his father, no more did others keep towards him. For euen those men who for his sake had forsaken his father, rise now in rebellion against the Son. For presently vpon his returne in the yeere 1116, into *Germanie*, the Pope congregateth a full Councell of his owne creatures, and there bewailing his sinne, which he had committed in surrendring his priuileges; after long and solemne debating of the case, vndoeth all he had done before; confirmeth the Decrees of *Gregorie* the sequenth; and vpon the custome lately taken vp, Excommunicateth *Henrie*.

Hereupon many the Princes of *Germanie*, and especially the Bishop of *Mogunce* fall into rebellion. *Cesar* fendeth vnto the Pope, to treat a peace, but by his death that businesse was determined.

After his decease the Cardinalls create *Gelasius* Pope, neither calling *Cesar* to Councell, nor once acquainting him with their determinations. Whereat *Cesar* being agreeued, flyeth to Rome, & consecrateth *Mauritius* Archbishop of *Brachar* for Pope.

Gelasius being deposed, and *Maurice* confirmed, they both conspire with ioynt consent to curse the Emperour in his retrait from Rome, dispersing their Ministers through *Germanie* after the precedents of their predecessors to incite the Subiects of the Emperour to rebellion. *Henrie* fearing the sequell, hastneth into *Germany*.

Gelasius being dead, *Calixtus* the second being his suc-

successor, warreth vpon the Antipope, whom as wee told you the Emperour had consecrated. *Henrie* perceiving the Pope, vnderborne by the Armes of the *Normans*, to bee too strong for him, and that he began to meate the same measure towards him, as his predecessors had towards his father: In the yeere 1122. by the speciall mediation of the Apostolicke Legat *Lampert*, afterward Pope, and called *Honorius*, he became so deuote a Conuert to Papacie, that hee resigned his whole right of Inuestiture concerning the Ring and the Staffe; granted a free Election and Consecration to be thenceforth vsed in all Churches; and couenanted to restore, or at least, to cause to be restored all Regalities, formerly renounced, or at least as many as remained in his dispose.

The Pope againe couenanted, that the Election of Bishops and Abbots should be done in the Emperors presence, without violence: so farre forth that the Elect should receiue his Regalities, by the Scepter from the Emperour. This Concord bore date at *Wormes*, *Nono Cal. Octob. Anno Dom. M. C. XXII.*

But, albeit this *Henrie* vtterly discouraged with the Thunder-bolts of curses, gaue way to all Popish usurpations, and to the euerlasting staine and impouerishment of the Germane Empire, thrust his necke vnder the yoke of the Romish tyrannie, yet, in regard of new tumults and rebellions practised in *Belgia* and the higher *Germanie*, he could not liue out the remainder of his daies in affected peace. For appeazement whereof, as he trauelled towards *Vtrick*, he fell sicke, and died without issue. This accident, and not iniustly, men argued, to haue proceeded from the iudgement of God, for

for that contrary to his commandement, he had behaued himfelfe fo vngracioufly towards a father, that had fo well deferved of him his fonne.

Lotharius Saxo.

Hee raigned in the yeere 1125. about the fwe and twentie yeere of Henry the firft.



HENRIE being gone, and Germanie still reeking in blood and ciuill war: The greateft care that the Bifhops tooke, was to provide, that the people fhould not reunite their forces, and take time to breath from thefe inhumane and vnnaturall murders. Whereupon after the death of *Henrie*, when as *Cunrade* Duke of *Swenia*, *Henrie* the fift fifters fonne, laied claime to the Empire; againft him by the cunning of *Albert* Archbifhop of *Mogunce*, they fet vp *Lotharius* Duke of *Saxonie*, the man in truth whose infidelity they had vfed in the miscarriage of *Henrie* the fifth.

Cunrade is now in march, and hauing ouertopped mount *Septim*. is honorably receiued of the *Millanois* and crowned by the Archbifhop *Anfelme* at *Modoe-cia*, the chiefe Sea of the Kingdome of *Italie*. *Honorius*, in fauour of *Lotharius*, and in defpight of the Houfe of *Henrie* (which he thirfted vtterly to extinguish) depofeth *Anfelme*, and by the terror of his Curtes inforceth *Cunrade* to pofit out of *Italie*: Who finally in defpaire of the Germane aide by reason of their factions and diffenfions,

Orho Frifing.
li. 7. ca. 17.
Naucletus gen.
38.

diffenfions, vtterly giueth ouer his further hopes of inioying the Empire, and by the mediation of *S. Bernard* of *Clareuall*, falleth to make his peace with his corriuall *Lotharius*.

Lotharius being now fole and abfolute Lord of the Empire, according to his Saxonifh fimplicity, honouring the Papall Sea with more then common obferuancie, ceafeth not to deferue well thereof by all the offices of loue and duty, which an obedient fonne to the Church could poffibly imagine to performe. *Innocentius* the fecond, the fucceffor of *Honorius*, expelled by *Anacletus* Antipope and *Roger* Duke of *Apulia*, flying vnto him for fuccour, to his infinit charge he reftored to his Sea at *Barionea*.

But belecue me, neither thefe kind offices, nor any worldly refpects, were of ability either to fruftrate or to mollifie the Popifh auarice: for when the Pope had declared *Lotharius* Emperor, he made fhew as if he would againe feeke reftitution of the auncient rites, which the Empire claimed in the election of Bifhops and Abbots: But the rauinous Pope not only refufed to vnloofen his talents vpon what he had already feifed, but alfo re-attaching whatfoeuer *Lotharius* himfelf either by the perfuafion of *Bernard*, or in feare of further fedition, had voluntarily offered to the Romifh fea, he laboured by all other meanes to adde more to the former, through his immeffurable auarice.

For when *Lotharius* hauing expelled *Roger* the *Apulcan*; would haue beftowed the Dutchy vpon Earle *Reignold* the generall of his armie; the Bifhop impleded him, as concerning the right of donation, with fo vehement a contention, that neither being minded to

Nauclet. gen. pre-
allegata, faith
that this was
done at Leyden,
before his iour-
ny into Italy.

Orho Frifing.
and Nauclet. in
the fore alleged
places.

yeeld to other, the controuerſie at laſt was faine to be thus determined: viz. That both parties ſhould lay their hands vpon the Staſſe of the Feodarie enſigne, then to be deliuered to the new Duke of Apulia: Thereby ſignifying that both of them had equall intereſt in the transportation of that Dukedome.

So that, the more humility accompanied with ſweet behauiour and moderation, that this all-praiſe-worthy Emperor ſhewed towards the Papacie: The more the waywardneſſe and malice of the Romanists began to ſhew it ſelfe, and that without feare or modeſty. For whereas this Emperor in receiuing the Diademe had caſt himſelfe at the Popes feete, the Clergie, to uſe the precedent to the debaſement of ſucceeding Emperors; and to deliuer it as a trophee to poſterity, as ſoon as his backe was turned, ſet vp in the Lateran pallace his protraiture, with this inſcription.

Rex venit ante fores, iurans prius urbis honores:

Post homo fit Papa, ſumit quo dante Coronam.

The King attends before the gates: and ſweares the City-rites to keepe:

From Romes great Paſtor takes his Crowne, and vowes to hold in vaſſalage.

What was this, but a bewraying firſt of their frowardneſſe, manifeſted in deſpiſing the Maieſty of ſo high a calling; and ſecondly of their pride, in that forſooth, they would ſeem either to ouertop, or obſcure, the victorious geſts of him, who to his immortall commendation had ſubiected vnder tribute, the Duke of Polonia, the Pomeranes and the Ruſſies: who I ſay, to the no ſmall honor of the Maieſty Imperiall, had inforced the King of Denmarke to beare the ſword at his Coronation;

*cuſp. in the life
of Lotharius of
Saxonic.*

on; had ſubiugated the ſtates of Cremona, and Pavia, *Naocl. Gen. 38.* and brought the vanquiſhed Bononians and Piemontois into the forme of a prouince: and finally with the conqueſt of Apulia, had brought vnder obedience many moſt noble Cities in that Dutchy. Now is he vanquiſhed, and acknowledged the Popes bondſlaue. For what other ſignification doth the Popes (Creature) import, but to be his vaſſall or ſeruant? Such are theſe admirable ſeruants of ſeruants, whom euen Emperors themſelues are glad to acknowledge and reſpect as Lords and Maſters. *Hominem ſervi.*

Conradus tertius.

He reigned in the yeere of Chriſt 1138. about the third yeere of King Steuen.



Lotharius, in his ſecond retrait out of Italie, being departed this world not farre from Trent, Conrade the ſame Prince (whom as before we told you) the malice of Honorius had fruſtrated of the Empire, and baniſhed Italie, now ſucceedeth his dead predeceſſor. But, albeit (after the deceaſe of Lotharius) the Princes of the Empire, and that in the preſence of Theodoret the Popes legate, and with his very good liking, did elect him King of Romans, yet by no meanes could the Popes aſſent be gotten to perfect the Election. *cuſp. in the life of Conrade.*

For whereas hee had conferred to Roger Duke of Apulia, that Dukedome, with the titular dignity of a Kingdome, in lieu of ranſome for himſelfe, and his

Cardinalls taken in battell; and *Conrade* in preiudice of the Empire would neither ratifie, nor hearken vnto so vnreasonable a motion: *Nocentius* complotting with *Roger*, incited *Guelfo* Duke of *Banaria*, to rebell against *Conrade*, for that hee could not obtaine at his hands the graunte of his brothers Dutchie: Herewith, the Emperour had so much to doe to defend his owne, that hee quite forgot to thinke vpon the recovery of *Sicil* and *Apulia*. Behold here a president of Papall fidelity, if his auarice bee not supplied by losse to the State.

About this time these fatall factions of the *Guelfes* and *Gibellines* (whereof others haue discoursed) began in Germanie.

For as *Nauclerus* reporteth out of *Hermanus*, whilst the battell was fighting betweene *Conrade* and *Guelfo*, those of the Kings party tooke for their word or Motto, *Hie Wiebling*, which is as much to say, *The King*: as being nobly discended from a village of that appellation: Those which followed *Guelfo*, reclaimed, *Hie welf*. Where after it came to passe, that those two denominations of *Guelfes* and *Gibellines*, became the originall of all the factions in *Italy*. Which falling out happely for *Gregorie* the ninth to make vse of, from thenceforth, he gaue them such large entertainment, that no City, towne nor people were cleere from the infection of so spreading a contagion. For vpon no other ground, saue the vse of these names, euen vntill our daies with more then admirable fury, City bandied against City, Prouince against Prouince, yea & in a City one part of the people confronted another.

Not only the factious people continued this dissension

Naucler out of
Antoninus and
Godfridus
Gen. 38.

Naucler Gen. 38.
& 32.

Bartolus in a
peculiar booke of
the *Guelfes*
and *Gibellines*.
Panorm. in c.
Lucanis & *Pi-*
sanis de rest.
spol.
Cuspin. in the
life of *Fred.* the
second.

sion amongst themselues: but the Bishops also in this quarrell prosecuted one another to the vtmost of their furie.

Amongst others, that *Boniface* the eight, then whom the *Romane* Sea neuer indured a more fell monster, persecuted from place to place all those whome hee knew to bee of the *Gibelline* faction, ransacking and spoiling all places whereunto they made any repaire of abiding. Whereupon some finding no safety in Cities, setled their abodes in woods and Forrests: manie of the *Gentrie*, like wilde beastes inhabited the Sea coastes, and at last left *Italic* to bee companions with pirates. For they assured themselues, that the Pirates could not haue vsed them worse, then this *Malefacius Nero* would haue done, if he had once caught them in his clutches.

As for example: When hee heard that certaine of the contrarye faction were fledde to *GENOA*, hee posted after them, with full determination by destroying them all, to haue razed their verie name from the memorie of mankind through the whole world. Heere likewise it happened vpon Ashwednesdaie, as hee was casting Ashes according to Custome amongst the people: the Archbishop of the City kneeling vpon his Maribones with his head vncouered to receiue the Ashes; the Pope by chaunce vnderstanding that hee was a *Gibelline*; where his Holinesse should haue saide, *Remember Man that thou art but Ashes, and into Ashes thou shalt returne againe*: Not so (quoth the Pope) *Remember Man that thou art a Gibelline, and with the Gibellines thou must bee turned to dust*:

Plati. in the life
of *Bonif.* the
eight. *Naucler*.
Gen. 44.

and therewithall in a most furious manner, without once regarding the holinesse of the place, the presence of the people, or the regard of Religion, of set purpose (missing his head) he cast great quantities thereof into his eyes: Afterward he depriued him, and then againe restored him.

At last by Gods iudgement it came to passe, that those Gentlemen, who (as we told you) left *Italy* with the Pirates, returned againe, and gathering together some companies of such as here & there lay lurking in feare of *Maleface*, breaking open the gates of the place where he lay, mistrusting no such aduerse aduenture, they tooke him, and brought him prisoner to *Rome*: where in the space of siue and thirtie dayes, what for grieffe and greatnesse of stomacke, he breathed out his loathsome soule, ouer-laden with innumerable mischiefs.

Fredericke Barbarossa.

He reigned Anno Christ. 1152. about the seuenteenth yeare of King Steuen.

Frederick, for his redde Beard, commonly termed *Barbarossa*, the sonne of *Frederick* Duke of *Swenia*, the brother of *Conrade*, a Prince of excellent partes both for body and minde, succeeded this *Conrade*, a Prince also no whit inferiour to his successor for his honourable carriage in peace and warre.

To speake little of his Nobility, it is recorded, that the

the intire right of the most noble Families of the *German* Common-wealth, viz. of the *Henries* of *Gweiblingen* and *Gwelforum* of *Altorff*, descended vpon him.

Howsoeuer; by the consent of all writers, hee was reputed to bee of an excellent capacitie, prouident in Councell, of a good memorie, eloquent, constant and valiant, a good Souldier, and well practised in Armes; To the humble, courteous; To the peaceable, milde. Amongst honest men, vertuous; Amongst protide persons, incompatible. Very bountifull, and in science of many humane ornaments, not immatcheable to any. In regard of which his manifold vertues, by the suffrage of the whole Nobilitie, he is declared Emperour, not without assured expectation, that through his worthinesse, Peace should be maintained through *Germanie*, the disgraced forces of the Empire restored, and *Italy* now growne insolent through continuall rebellion, brought into order and requisite acknowledgment.

The Romish contentions with the Germane Emperours, by vile and nouell prescription, seemed now so possessionated, that the Bishops, by whose suffrage the Emperours were to be confirmed, began to make small or no account of the Imperiall Maiestie, which the preposterous ambition, and immatcheable pride of the Romanists, the Germane Princes (and who can blame them) taking to heart, could hardly digest: but by how much this noble *Heros* in the greatnesse of his mind, meditated to abate the insufferable pride of this pernicious rable: by so much the more found hee all things to oppose against him with more and more disadvantage, to the impeachment of all his proiects. Which

Which his noble exploits albeit they are not vknowne to all men; neither is it any part of my minde, nor the proiect of this pamphlet to set them downe punctually (for so they would require an *alias*) yet by patience I will glance briefly at some of them, which in my judgement shall sufficiently informe you, what was the obseruancie, and what the fidelity of the Bishops of these times, towards the sacred maiestie of this most worthy Emperour.

Obserue therefore, that the third yeare after his election, this *Frederic* hauing set *Germanie* in order, and especially through infinite paines taking procured a firme peace betweene *Henry* the younger, and *Henry*, Dukes of *Saxonie* and *Austrich*, with a populous armie marcheth into *Lombardy*, now by the long absence of the Emperours, growne confident in ability of resistance, by proiecting many infallible signes of insolencie and rebellion. By the way, he destroyeth the camp of the *Milanois*, *Rosatum*, *Gailarda*, *Treca* and *Gaira*, and setteth the citie of *Ast* on fire: *Derthona* most strongly fortified by art and nature, hee taketh by force: and from thence remouing his troops through *Romania* and *Tuscanie*, hee passeth as farre as *Sutrium*.

In these times the *Romane* sea stood incumbered with most dangerous contentions. *William* King of *Sicil*, who succeeded *Roger* (the same that we spake of in the life of *Conrade*) had taken from *Hadrian* the fourth, by birth an English man, the suburbs of *Beneuent*, *Ceperanum* and *Bacum* in *Campania*.

Moreouer, the *Romanes* by the instigation of *Arnold* of *Brixia*, redemanding their lost liberties in chusing

Naucl. vbi supra.
Haenonicus li. 3.

sing their senate for the gouernment of their Citie, maintained the contention so farre forth against *Hadrian*, that as, after his election, hee made his progresse towards the *Lateran* to be consecrated, the people meeting the Cardinal of Saint *Pudentiana* in the *via sancta* taking his way towards the Court, twice wounded him.

At this outrage *Pope Hadrian* grew out of all patience, accurseth the King, releaseth his subiects of their oath of allegiance, & the easier to draw them into rebellion, leaueth them at libertie.

The *Romans* sped no better, vntill vpon alteration of their humours, they banished *Arnold* out of the Citie, and renouncing their Consular prerogatiues, diuested the absolute gouernment of the place vpon the discretion of his Holinesse.

Who now hearing that *Frederic* was vpon his way towards *Rome*, the *Pope* with his Cardinals, neither for loue nor in honour, but to mediate reuenge against the *Romans* and *Roger*, goe forth to salute him. *Frederic* reioysing at the approach of his Holinesse, receaueth him with wonderfull deuotion and maiestie; holdeth his left stirrope as hee alighteth from horse-back, & so conducteth him to the Imperial pauilion. Could more reuerence be deuised to be done by an Emperour to a *Pope*? when *Christ* came to *Ierusalem* vpon *Palme* Sunday, did *Herod* or *Pilat* so obserue him? or did *Nero* so salute *Peter* at his first comming to *Rome*?

Well, these so great personages being arriued at the emperiall pauilion; The Bishop of *Bamberg* in the name of the Emperour in the exordiū of his oration, began to discourse, with what earnestnes of affection his

H

Maiestie

Funcius li. 10.
Chro.
Barnus de uitis
Pontif.

Helmold in the
cro. of Sclauony
ca. 81.

Maiestie had desired this long expected conference with his Holinesse. *And God be blessed* (quoth he) *that he now is become master of his desires*. Humbly and submissiuely he requesteth your Holinesse, that according to the accustomed maner, by the Inauguration of the Imperiall diadem, you would declare him chiefe Prince and defender of the Catholique Common-weale. And herewithall the Bishop concludeth honestly, and elegantly, with the reasons and causes, which could not but inable him most worthy of so reasonable, so iust, and so Christian-like a confirmation.

The Bishop hauing ended his Oration, the Pope commendeth the speach; but withall replieth; That the contents thereof, and the matter in hand were of farre different arguments. *For albeit* (quoth hee) *that the matter whereof I meane to speake of, be triuial & passable; yet can it not be denied, but that there is cause of feare, that hee, who becommeth negligent in small matters, will proue more negligent in greater.*

At this, the company rowling their attentions, and wondring what offence his Holinesse should intimate; he goeth on; saying, *As I alighted from my horse, he held the left stirrope of my Saddle: and whether he did it in mockage of vs, or vpon some other like fantasie, wec can not guesse, for surely if he meant to haue honoured vs, he knew that the right stirrope, and that with the right hand, ought to haue bene holden.*

Cesar being nothing moued with this base prattle of the Bishop, smiled and replied; *That he had not been brought vp to hold a stirrope: you most Holy father, quoth he are the first vnto whom we haue vouchsafed this office:* And by and by after his orisons, forgetting his patience

ence; *I would know* (saith he) *whether this office be to be done of dutie, or of good-will. If of good-will, who would finde fault at an escape or oversight? If of dutie, then wee thinke amongst friends there is small difference, on which side the partie that meaneth to honour his friend, approacheth.* Thus bandying a few bitter words, they brake company, but not without stomaking.

But the Emperour being a most prudent Prince, dissembling what he had heard, and seene to proceede from the hellish heart of this proud prelate, the next day following re-inuiteth the Bishop to a second conference. The Bishop approacheth, the Emperour maketh speed to meet him; and by his former oversight, being now become a better Prentize in his occupation, *layeth hold on the right stirrope*, and so leadeth his Holinesse into his pavilion.

Being set, thus Hadrian thundereth: *Thine auncestors* (saith he) *Princes of the auncient world, who made their holy repaire vnto this sea to receiue the crown at our hands, were accustomed to manifest their lowes towards vs, by some notable emolument bestowed vpon S. Peters chaire; thinking it their duties to preuent vs, that so they might call the world to witnesse, that they obtained our benediction and their inauguration with an eminent gratuitie.* So Charles, after he had tamed the Lombards: So Otho, after he had subdued the Beringary; And so Lotharius, after he had repressed the Normanes, merited the Imperiall diadem.

In like manner, Let your Serenity, restore vnto vs and the Church, *Apulia* an appendancie of the Romish sea, now arrogated by the Normanes, and then shall you, with our very good will, obtaine as much as appertaineth vnto our lowes to performe.

Vpon the reading of this Historie, can any man call this Prelat *seruum seruorum*, who ashamed not to exact from so great an Emperour, his Lord and Master, as from a bale and mercinarie souldier, the laborious toiles, and the extreame expence of warfare *gratis*? Are conquests of Kingdomes, surrendring of Prouinces, and such like passages (let any man tell me) those *spiritualia*, whereof our moderne Papists doe hold the Pope capable?

When the Nobility saw no remedie, but *Hadrians* hand was as hard as *Pharaos* heart, so that it were folly to expect a Coronation, vntil at their proper costs and charges they had restored to the Apostaticall sea, *Apulia* (in truth an appendancie of the Imperiall right) from *William* King of *Sicil*; they thought it fittest to content his holinesse with this ouerture; That *since* their present forces were wasted through continuall labour and indefatigable iourneyes, that *Cæsar* hauing leuied a new armie in Germanie, would returne, and accomplish his expectation. The Bishop flaming what with indignation against *William*, & almost halfe dead to heare, that against his will hee must *volens nolens* giue him time of breathing and re-inforcement, shewing a countenance as if he liked well of their excuses, allowed thereof, and so dismissed them with promise that hee would set the crowne vpon *Fredericks* head.

These busineses thus dispatched; the Emperour with the Bishop departeth from *Sutrium*, and iournieth towards *Rome*. Mid way certaine Romane Orators, as full swolne with pride, as their Master with disdain, account him with this rude welcom: *For their theanes they begin to extoll, even aboue the skies, the antiquitie of their*

*Friskes. li. 2.
cap. 21.*

their Commonwealth: At conclusion they fall in glorious termes to intimate, *That of mere good will the Roman people had called Frederick out of Germany over the Alps, first to create him a citizen, and afterwards a Prince of Rome*; but with this per-closse; *That the Romans stood ready to receiue him; vpon condition; That hee should confirme the fundamental lawes of the City: That hee should bestow vpon the Romans who were to bid God save him, in the Capitol, five thousand pound of gold: That he should defend the commonwealth from iniuries, euen to the hazard of his own life: And finally, that he should confirme all these capitulations with an oth, and thereto set his hand.*

*If the Pope can
not haue Apulia
presently, he
must haue gold
without excuse.*

Fredericke beeing beyond meane intraged at these their mad and arrogant motions, roundly taketh them vp for their follies in a most pithy oration: and telleth them, *That the Empire descended vpon him, not by any the least well-wish of the Romanes, but by the meer vertue of the Germanes*. And perceiuing their knauery, that vnder pretext of these demands, they meant to gull him of mony; he told them in plaine termes: *That he came not into Italie, to bring it in, but to carrie it out*. With which answer when these impudent shauelings were not satisfied, but still vrged the Articles, his Maiesty disgracefully commanded them to depart.

And perceiuing that their comming vnto him was but to put som trick vpon him, he caused his men of war to fortifie the Church of *S. Peter* and the bastile of *Leo*. The day following he entred *Rome*, the people following him with great applause and being honorably accompanied, was crowned and blessed. 4. Calend. Iulij. in the fourth yere of his raigne.

The Emperour being about his Coronation in the Church

Church of *S. Peter*, the Romanes stomacking the businesse, and betaking them to their armes, kept the gates of the City shut, vnder colour, that the Emperour should bring in no forces to the preiudice of the Citie. And perceiuing that *Fredericks* troopes had pitched their tents in the *Neronean meadowes*, through the gate of *Hadrian* they breake out into the *Vatican*, to preuent *Cesars* souldiers from entring thereinto.

Cesars souldiers made strong resistance, and driuing the intraged people from the *Vatican* into the City, they slew about one thousand, and tooke sixty prisoners: whom, the ceremonies being ended, at request of the Pope, the Emperor dismissed in safety, and provided for his returne into *Germanie*.

But before his departure, it is reported, that such a like businesse happened betweene him and the Pope, which I thinke not fit here to be pretermitted.

Innocent the second, he whom a little before *Lotharius* had restored vnto the Papacie, had caused to be painted in a Table, the Pope (as it were) sitting in his chaire, and the Emperor with his hands held vp together, receiuing the Imperiall Diadem: where vnder were written the foresaid two verses; *Rex venit ante fores &c.* When this picture with the inscription, was shewed vnto his Maiesty, it did greatly displease him, and casting foorth some obiurgatorie word, he instanced the Pope to take it away: which hee promised to doe, least so friuolous a spectacle might giue matter of discontent to many worthy personages then residing in the City.

Frederick is departed: and *Emanuel* Emperour of *Constantinople* vnderstanding with what desire of reuenge

*Cronicon Her-
saugienae in vi-
ta Hartnigi
abbatis. Rade-
wicus li 3. num.
3. & 10.*

uenge the Popes stomach burned against *William* King of *Apulia*, by *Palcologus* his Orator and Embassador, he offereth vnto the Pope his voluntary seruice; and withall, to expulse *William* out of *Italie*; vpon condition, If the businesse tooke expected issue, that then, according to the treaty, the *Grecian* should inioy three maritime cities in *Apulia*. Doubt not, I beseech you, but that he who had already depriued *William* of *Apulia*, for contemning such religious wares, as are Popish Bulls and Curfes, did not straine much curtesie to accept of the Articles. Whereof *William* taking notice, and withall somewhat fearefull, by his Embassadours moueth his holinesse to hearken vnto peace; promising not only to restore vnto the Church, whatsoeuer he had taken away, but also that he would adde somewhat of his owne thereto. Moreover, that hee would thencefoorth containe the Romans, rebells to the Church, in their due obedience.

These were honourable conditions, but that the Pope should not accept thereof, the Cardinalls dissuaded him, like true men of armes, hoping to reape more crownes by war, then by peace. Whereupon, warre is proclaimed against *William*. Hee leuieth an army throughout *Sicily*, landeth in *Apulia*, wasteth the country by sword and fire, and finally routeth *Emanuel*, who had pitched his Tents not far from *Brundisium* vnto *Benuent*, where at that time the Pope with his Cardinalls resided, he gaue such sharpe assaults, that in despaire of their liues, he enforced them to sue for peace.

William accordeth, and is receiued into fauour, and proclaimed king of both kingdoms, on this side and beyond *Pharum*, but vpon oath, that from thenceforth he

hee would neuer againe infest the territories of the Church.

Thus, as you heare, matters being ignominiously compounded, the Pope riding in visitation through the territories of the *Casertines, Marzi, Reatini, Narnienses and Tudertini*, at last arriueth at *Quieta*; and there is giuen to vnderstand, that Rome is in combustion, the Consuls doing their vtmost to restore the City to it former liberty.

Hereupon groundeth He his deadly hatred against *Frederick*, most grieuously complaining, that being in distresse between the swords of the Romans and *William*, that contrary vnto his superabundant promises, against all right, he had forsaken him; yea, that he was now so incircled with perils, that he could not liue in security at Rome: As if the Emperor were a vessell especially chosen rather to patronize the Popes wilfull errors and ouersights, then to defend the innocency of the Christian flock committed vnto his tutelage.

But *Fredericke* taking in euill part many the Popes actions, but especially *the alienation of Apulia, being an appendancy of the imperiall dignity, without his consent or knowledge*: As also calling to remembrance, *That the Pope had wrested from the late Emperors the right of Investiture of Prelates: That by his ministers hee had impou- rished the subiects of the Empire, and by their subtill dis- persions of treasonable practises, had done what in them lay, to raise sedition throughout the Empire*: Vpon these grounds, I say, the Emperours Maiesty now thought it high time to put remedy vnto these violent intrusi- ons vpon the regalities of the Empire.

Hereupon hee exacteth an oath of fidelity of all the Bishops

Bishops of *Germany*; The Popes Legats (such as were not called in by his good pleasure) he commandeth to depart the Teutonick kingdom: prohibiteth his people either to appeale or trauaile to the Romish Court and in his mandats causeth his name to be inserted before the Popes.

Vpon the proclaiming of this Inhibition, it happened, that a certaine Bishop in his way from Rome, (whether as a contemner of the Emperors edict, or vpon any other cause, I know not) was taken prisoner, and committed to ward.

Radeuicus li. 3. ca. 9. 10.

Now hath the Pope found an occasion by the taking of this Bishop, to fulminate his long-conceiued displeasure against the Emperor, and by a proud Embassie, seemeth only to be agreeued, that the Bishop is not deliuered from Captiuitie; but withall interlaceth, both in his letters, as also in the speeches of his legat, many blundering *Items*; which did abundantly insinuate in what manner he deemed the Emperor to be obliged vnto him.

For by his letters he wisht him to re-consider, how from him he had receiued the confirmation of the Imperiall crowne; and yet did his Holinesse nothing repent it, had the fauours which he had bestowed vpon him, been far more beneficiall.

Vpon the reading of which letters, the nobility falling into discontent, one of the Legats rose vp, and resolutely tooke vpon him to broach: *That the Romane Empire was transferred from the Grecians to the Almans, not to be called Emperor, but King of the Teutonicks, until he were confirmed by the Apostolique see: Before consecration he was a King, after an Emperor: Whence then hath hee*

his Empire, if not of the Pope? By the election of the nobility he hath the name of a king, by consecration of the Pope, the stile of an Emperor, and Cæsar Augustus, Ergo per Papam imperat. Search Antiquity: Zachary inobled Charles and gaue him the surname of Great, that he might be Emperor: and ordained that euer after the Teutonic King should bee Emperor, and Champion of the Apostolique Sea: That Apulia, by him should be pacified, and restored to the Church, being in truth holden of S. Peter, and not of the Empire.

Rome is the seat of the Pope, Aquis in Arden is the Emperors: whatsoeuer the Emperor possesseth, he holdeth it whollie of the Pope. As Zachary transferred the Empire from the Greeks to the Teutonic: So may the Pope retransfer it from the Almans to the Grecians. Behold, it is in his power to giue it to whom he pleaseth, being onlie constituted of God ouer Kingdoms and people; to destroye, to pull downe, to build and to plant. In conclusion, he termeth the Germans cowards, for that they could neither expulse Roger out of Italy, nor would at anie time bring the Danes and Frislanders to subiection. Vpon the hearing of these scandalous exorbitations, both the Emperor conceived a iust displeasure, and the whole nobility so stormed thereat, that Otto of Wittelspach drawing the sword, which he accustomed to beare before the Emperor, had shethed it in the body of the Legat, had not the Emperor thrust betweene them. Of these abuses the Emperor euer after made vse, pretending that the cause of his so and so doing, took originall from these fauicy and malepert speeches of the Popish ministers. And thereupon causing the Legats to be safe conducted to their lodging, at break of day hee commaunded them

Radeuicus ubi
supra.

them to be packing; with especiall caution, that they should not come hether and thether vpon the liuings of the Bishops & Abbots: but that they should keepe the high way towards the Citie, without declining therefrom either to the right hand or the left. The especiall reason was, that according vnto the accustomed dog-trick of the Romanists, they should not disperse their conceiued poyson of discontent ouer all the Churches and Parishes of the Kingdome; neither strip the Altars, nor carie away the vtensils of Gods house, nor fliee the crosses.

And because that no man should imagine, that this intimation was inflicted aboue desert, nor any commotion should thereupon arise, Cæsar by the counsell of the wise men of his Kingdome, sendeth his letters through the whole Empire, shewing the tenour of the cause. And thereunto adioyneth his most passionate complaints vpon the diminution of the honor of the Empire: with a declaration, That by the election of the Princes, vnder God onely, the Empire had deuolued to him and his successours. Against which, if any man presumed to affirme that the Emperour ought to hold of the Pope in fee, he was to suffer punishment, as a person guilty of an vntruth, & one that maintained an opinion contrarie to the diuine institution, & the doctrine of Saint Peter.

The Legats ariue at Rome, where in most calumnious manner aggrauating their wrongs and iniuries, in the presence of Hadrian, by adding flame to fire, they so incense his holinesse already transported with furie and reuenge, but to thinke that Frederick had done, what his auncestors durst not haue dreamed of (for of

which of the Romane Emperours is it read of, that euer interdicted the Romanists Germanie.) That forthwith hee addresseth his minitory letters vnto *Caesar*: wherein most bitterly and papally hee expostulateth with his Maiestie of these and all fore-passed greuanances. The transcript whereof because they are worth the reading and animaduersion, for the benefit of the Reader I will here insert.

Naucl. fo. 761.
Gen. 39.

Adrian Bishop, *seruant vnto the seruants of God, sendeth greeting and apostolicall benediction vnto Frederick Emperour of Romanes.* As the Diuine Law assureth long life vnto those, that render due obedience vnto their parents: So, vnto him that disobeyeth his father or mother, it inflicteth the sentence of death, and damnation. The voice of veritie doth teach vs, that euery soule that exalteth it selfe, shall be humbled. Whereupon (beloued sonne in the Lord) according vnto your wisdom, we are not a little amazed, that you shew not that measure of reuerence towards Saint Peter, and the Romane Church, as you are bound to doe. In your letters dated to our Holinesse, you insert your stile before Ours. Wherein, you incurre the scandall of presumption, I will not say, of Arrogancie. As concerning your fealtie auowed and sworne to Saint Peter and vs, how is it kept, when you require Homage, exact fealty, and hold the holy hands of those betweene yours, who are duly dedicated to God, being his most glorious children, viz. the Bishops, shewing your selfe manifestly rebellious vnto vs, in denying our Cardinals (directed vnto you from our side) not onelie entrance into the Churches, but also into the Cities of your Kingdome? Repent, repent therefore wee aduise you, least that in seeking to deserue a Crowne and coronation, at our hands, in affecting things vnganted, you lose not what

is

is alreadie granted. We tender your noblenesse.

What inference of humility or apostolicall lenitie appeareth (I beseech you) in these letters? nay, rather may not a good Christian without offence terme such a pride to be truly Luciferian, that taketh so great a scorne to haue the papall stile placed behinde the Imperiall, as if other Emperours in their letters to His Holinesse, had not before times done the like? See 97. *dist. c. victor. & 63. distinct. c. tibi.*

After the receite of these blunt and proud-papall mandats, the Emperour according to his excellent sufficiencie in Christian sapience, requiteth him; and as the prouerb is, driuing out one nail with another, he payeth his holinesse home in this manner.

Frederick by the grace of God Emperour of Romanes alwaies Augustus, vnto Adrian Bishop of the Catholique congregation. Whatsoeuer Iesus began to doe and to teach, in all things ought wee that to follow. The Law of Iustice distributeth vnto euerie man his owne. wee derogate not from our parents, as long as in this Kingdome we vouchsafe them due Honour, from whom, viz. our progenitours, wee haue receaued the dignitie and Crowne of the Kingdome. I pray you in the time of Constantine was Siluester known to haue anie interest in the Regalties? By his Pietie, the Church obtained libertie and peace: and what euer iura regalia your Papacie can claime, they accrewed vnto you by the bounty of Princes. Turne ouer the Cronicles, and if you please not to belieue what I write, there shall you finde as much as we affirme. What should then let vs, that we should not exact homage and oathes of allegiance from them, which are Gods by adoption, yet hold of vs in regaltie: sithence that He, who was ours and your Master (taking nothing from

Nau. fo. 792.

the King, but distributing all his goods indifferently amongst all persons; paying tribute to Cæsar for himselfe and Peter, and leaving the example behinde him for you to follow) hath warranted the president, by saying; Learne you of me, for I am meeke and humble of heart. Wherefore, let them either resigne their regalties, viz. their temporalities; or in the name of God, if they shall iudge them profitable, let them give unto God the things that are Gods, and unto Cæsar, what belongeth to Cæsar. The reason wherefore we interdicted your Cardinals, the Churches, and forbade them our Cities, was because we finde them not Preachers, but robbers: not peace-makers but money masters: not conuerters of the people, but heapers of insatiable treasure. Yet, when we shall finde them, such as the Church ordaineth them; messengers of peace, lights to their Countrie, and impartiall assistants to the cause of the Plumble, then will we not deferre to relieue them with competent stipends, and necessary provisions: meane time you wrong humilitie, the Princeesse of vertues, and mightilie scandalize your submissiuensse, by terrifying the consciences of secular persons, with positions wholly impertinent to religion. Let your fatherhood therefore take heede, lest while you motion points of such nature (whereof we make light account) that you offend not those, who would otherwise euen in hast open their eares as willingly unto the words of your mouth, as unto a presage of a ioyfull accident. These things we can not but aunswere, since so detestable a beast of pride hath crept into S. Peters Chaire. Fare you well alwaies, and God at all times make you carefull for the peace of the Church.

What humane spirit can scandalize these the Emperors letters? What scruple of equity, of piety, or vprightnesse can any man say is wanting in them? Who can

can iustifie, that hee wrote otherwise then became a true and a Christian Emperor? He but retorted the Bishops pride; he maintained but the honor of the Empire; he sought but reason, and that was, Christian humility and modesty in Christian Churchmen; which in those times, as the world then complained, was not to be found in that sort of people.

What followed? Peace I warrant you: nothing lesse. For the Pope not contented that by letters hee had bandied with the Emperor, but writing vnto all the Archbishops and Bishops of Germany, he punctually noteth downe the carriage of the cause, and aggravateth the indignity of the fact: Admonishing them, that since the action concerned the whole body of the Church (for they will make vs beleue that without their intrusions all Christendom must perish) that they should corroborate themselues, as a wall of brasse to sustaine the declining estate of the house of God. And that they should not only find meanes to reduce the Emperor into the right way, but also take open and condigne satisfaction vpon Rainold the Emperors Chancellor, and Otto Earle of Wittelsbach, who forsooth had belched out infinit blasphemies against the Apostolike Legats and the Church of Rome: That as the incivilitie of their speech had offended the eares of manie, so their penances might be an example to restore as manie againe into the right path of obedience.

But for that (as certaine of the writers of that age doe testifie) the then Bishops were not so eagerly addicted to maintaine the Popes vsurpations, as many of them are now, they conuocated a Councell, and thus wrote backe vnto his fatherhood: That they were not.

The Epistle is to be seen in Radewicus li. 3. c. 15.

Notable policy: cunning and hypocrisie.

Iacob. Spigelius in annotat. ad Ligurinum Gunthori. li. 60. fol. 143.

Epist. extat li. 3.
ca. 16. in Rade-
wicus.
Auent. li. 6. An-
nal. Boior.
fo. 636.

not onlie wonderfullie agreed at these abuses; but also Arnold of Mogunce and Euerard of Saltzburge by their private letters admonished all Roman Priests, Cardinals, Archbishops, Bishops and Massmengers, to giue ouer their saucinesse, their pride, their auarice, their perfidie, and all other enormities, by which they robbed the poore, and disturbed the peace of the Empire. Finallie they humblie besought them, that they would put their helping hands to worke Adrian to obserue peace: undertaking for the Emperor that he should do nothing, but what stood with religion, reason and equitie.

Sure these were bitter pills for Hadrians stomach: But what remedy? Popes, as they are cursefull, so are they politique, and beeing well skild in speculation, they know by the Planets, when it is high time to hold a candle before the Diuell. He that now reigneth is not Henrie the fourth, but Frederick the first: who is now preparing for Italie; and hauing sent his honorable Embassadors, Rainold his Chauncellor and Otto of Wittelsbach, before to assemble a conuocation of the Princes and Bishops of Italy, prepareth his way in potent and Princelike manner, and meaneth himselfe in short time to sit in person in Councell amongst them.

Now is it time to fly vnto the fox his case; a necromantique spell hath informed vs, that the Lions skin will nothing preuaile vs: Humble letters are dispatched towards Augusta to lenifie the Emperours displeasure; and Henrie Duke of Saxonie and Bawaria with Otto the Frison, made intercessors to reconciliation.

No long time after, Hadrian betakes himselfe againe to his perspective, where obseruing that the Cities of Italy (Crema being hardly besieged by Frederick) had inter-

Nau. Gen. 39.
Auent. loco pre
allegato. Rade.
li. 3. cap. 17.

interpreted a conspiracie to re-uindicate their liberty, the Pope hauing vtterly forgotten his yesterdaies reconciliation, traiterously adhereth to the faction and animateth the conspiracie vpon these conditions. First That neither partie should accept of peace without the good leau^e of the other. Secondly, That if the Bishop chanced to die, that none but one of the same faction, should be created in his stead.

And then to giue the better countenance to the rebellion, for an infinie Masse of mony hee is corrupted to accurse his Maiesty. So saith mine Author; but in these daies, I am of opinion, that malice is as powerfull in a Papiests breast as corruption in the Papall Court.

But our best and great God, who by the mouth of his seruant David, seemeth punctually to cry out against these hired Excommunications of Popes: *They curse, and thou blessest: Let those that rise against me be confounded, but thy seruant shall reioice.* This good God, I say, inuerted this execrable maledict vpon the Popes own head, and miraculously confounded the man, to the terror of all posterity. For being at Anagnina, the place where hee had excommunicated Frederick, it chanced that as he walked abroad amongst his familiars to take the aire, as hee was drinking at a certaine fountaine, a flye flying into his throat, stucke so fast therein, that no physicall experiment could giue him ease; and so he died miserably choked.

Would it not amase any humane flesh, to see so huge a gyant in the middest of his armed and rebellious battalions, but euen now scorning the Emperor and all his forces, presently to lye dead with the stroke of a flie? Or is there any Priest amongst them so irreligious,

Nau. Gen. 39.
ex Joh. Cremonensi.

gious, that dare but imagine, that this stroke proceeded from casualty, and not from the finger of God, considering that that throat which had but now belched out so iniust an execration against a most godlie and innocent Emperor, was also appointed the instrument to confound his spirits? Yea this vnshamed rabble, being nothing terrified with so miraculous a president, could by no meanes be diuerted from their intended conspiracy. For perceiuing that they could not haue their wills vpon his Maiefty by force, being strōg in soldiery, Lord of Italy, & in diuers ouerthrows putting the Millanois to the worfe; they made their recourse to villany, and by treason laid wait for his life.

To the execution whereof, by great rewards they cunningly corrupt a fellow of a strong body vnder the habit of a foole or iester to goe vnto *Landa*, the place where the Emperor then resided, and there vpon opportunity to offer him violence.

The traitor wholly animated by their large promises, resolueth vpon the villany, goeth to *Landa*; entreth the Campe, and by iests and fooleries maketh his accessse euer into the Emperors pavilion: His Tent at that time was pitched vpon the very banke of the riuer *Abdua*, so steep and sliding, that if any thing fell thereinto, the swift course of the streame would forth with carry it away with violence. Which the foole-villaine obseruing to be a fit proiect for his intended treason, assaulteth the Emperor (according to his custome going alone vnto his prayers by day dawning) and by struggling and tugging laboureth to carry him to the foresaid steep place. The Emperor plaieith the man, so that both parties being intangled with the tackling of the

*Radenicus li. 4.
ca. 40. & 4.
Gutharus in
Figuriali 9.
circa finem.*

the tents, fell to ground; by which time the Gentlemen of the chamber being awaked, by the calling of the Emperour, runne to succour, and taking the villaine, they threw him headlong into the same place of the riuer. This stratagem being frustrated, they fall to a second, but will be seene in neither.

They suborne eight creatures of their owne with plenty of crownes, to set *Landa* on fire. One of them mistaking the night, and laying his traines, was taken by the watch, with an other of his companions a counterfeit Monke, and both hanged.

Being also deceiued in the execution of this Gunpowder plot, they fall to a third; and send forth a certaine *Mountebank*, resolute to death, accompanied with some such fellowes as himsele, to set to sale in the Emperours Campe poysoned rings, bridels and spurres, so deadly inuenomed, that if the Emperour had touched any of them, he had surely perished. But his Maiestie being fore-warned, causeth this Marchant to be watched and apprehended: Commandeth him to be examined, but finding that he scorned both questions and torments, without more a-doe hee sendeth him to the gallowes.

Hadrian (as we told you) being choakt with a Fly, the Cardinals begin to wrangle about the choise of a successor. For two and twentie, being the Emperours aduersaries, would haue chosen *Koland of Siena*, one of those Cardinals; whom a little before *Hadrian* had sent Legat vnto *Frederick*, and *Frederick* had banished *Germanie*: But nine others adhearing to the Emperor, by the suffrages of the *Prefect* of the Citie, and the people, created *Ostianianus* a Romane borne, Priest and

*Ab. v. sparg.
Plat. in vita
Alex.
Nauic. Gen. 39.
Rad. li. 4. ca. 54.*

Cardinall of *Saint Clements*, and stiled him *Victor*.

But these rash elections being likely to foster infinite dissensions, It was agreed betweene the Electors of both parties; that neither of the Electeds should be confirmed, before it was agreed vpon at all hands who should be *the Man*, and the contention quite silenced.

But the *Roland*ers being the maior partie, falsifying their oathes, proclaimed the election of *Roland*, and new christned him *Alexander* the third. From hence arose a mighty Schisme. *Victor* remaineth at *Rome*, *Alexander* flieth vnto *William* King of *Sicil*, and there the twelfth day after his election, is confirmed Pope. And to preuent, that this dissension should not draw with it the finall destruction of the Church of *Rome*, by his legats, hee intreateth the Emperour *Frederick*, that by interposition of his authority, he would vouchsafe to put end to the Schisme. The doubtfull issue of a new Schisme much troubled *Frederick*; wherefore, finding that both the *Elettos*, being orderly consecrated, he could not lawfully determine the strife, without the authority of a Councell; after the examples of *Constantine*, *Theodosius*, *Iustinian* and other Emperors: (knowing that the summoning thereof appertained vnto him) he nominateth the day of the Assembly to be held at *Papia*; and thether he warneth both the Bishops to appeare, promising also to be there in person to take cognizance of eithers greuances.

After proclamation whereof, *Alexander* goeth to *Anagnia*, whereat the Emperour being angrie for his contempt, despatcheth his letters vnto him by *Daniel* and *Herman*, Bishops of *Prage* and *Verdim*, citing him

Behold the Em-
periall iurisdic-
tion solicited.
Raden. li. 4.
cap. 58.

Generall coun-
cels ominous to
Popes.

by the name of Bishop, and not of Pope, to appeare at the Councell.

Alexander reiecteth *Cesars* Ambassadors most con-
tumeliously, and in very arrogant termes telleth them
plainly, That the *Romane Bishop* was to bee iudged by no
mortall creature. They doing no good vpon *Alexander*,
retire towards *Octavianus*, him they salute as Pope, and
accompany to *Papia*. There the Councell being assem-
bled, and the cause vpon sufficient witnesse through
all circumstances iudicially examined, *Victor* is decla-
red Pope, and so acknowledged by all the German Bi-
shops by the commandement of *Cesar*.

At which pretended iniury *Alexander* being moo-
ued, he accurseth *Fredericke* and *Victor*: and forthwith
dateth his letters of iustification vnto all Christians
Kings and Potentates, That what He did, was done with
equitie and good reason. But at his returne into the Ci-
ty, finding many new vpstart aduersaries, openly op-
posing against him, he went to *Tarracine*: And there
going on shipbord, purposely there layde for him by
William of *Sicil*, hee retyred into *France*: where by the
good leaue of *Philip*, assembling a Conuenticle in
Claremount, in all hast he proclaimeth his curse against
the Emperour and the Antipope.

His Maiefty, albeit he foresaw the mischiefes likely
to arise vpon this dissension; notwithstanding he con-
tinueth his siege against *Millan*, vntill enforced by fa-
min and wants, the inhabitants voluntarily surrendred
the City at discretion, This dispatched, he sent his Am-
bassadors to the French King, to desire that he would
call a Councel at *Didion*: Whether if hee would bring
his Pope, then would his Maiefty also promise to bee
there,

*c. Patet. & ca-
nemo 9. q. 3.
Item 17. q. 4. ca.
Si quis suadente
in extremo.
Item dist. 40. c.
si papa.
Nauch. gen. 39.*

Naucl. gen. 39.

there, and with him, to bring his Pope also. What answer these Ambassadors receiued, it is not truly known: but so much is recorded to memory, that the Earle of Blois gaue the Emperor his faith, that the King his master would not faile to be there. Whereupon, at the prefixed day the Emperor with *Victor* kept promise, and pitched his tents neere *Didion*: Thither came also *Henrie* the second, and *William* kings of *England* and *Scotland*.

But *Alexander* could not only not be perswaded to come; vnder pretence, that the assembly was congregated by the Emperor, and not by him: but he also so wrought with *Philip*, that he came vnto the place indeed, but before the Emperor; where washing his hands in the riuer hard by, forthwith by the voice of an Heralld he summoned his Maiesty (as if herein he had satisfied his oath) and so departed. Wherewith the Emperor, the Kings, & the other Princes being much agreed, wished *Victor* to returne to his Popedome, and they retired euery man to his own home.

Naucl. ubi
supra.

Victor ariued at *Lucca* in *Hetruria*, fell sicke, and died: in whose place succeeded *Guido* Bishop of *Cremona*, called *Paschal* the third. And vnto him at *Goslar* the Emperor, and all the Princes and Bishops of *Germany* did their reuerence.

Alexander who was yet in *France*, to keep Rome in obedience, constituted *John* the Cardinall his Vicar generall, and regranted liberty to the Romanes to chuse their owne Consuls; provided that they were such as were fauorites of his faction. Then departeth he from *France* into *Sicil*, foorthwith returneth to Rome, and is willingly receiued of the Romanes, and

Guido

Guido reiected. Whereupon the cities of *Italie*, incouraged by the comming of *Alexander* to hope after liberty, contrary to their oathes sworne before vnto the Emperor, they reedified *Millan*, but lately razed and subuerted by *Cesar*. Then at the instigation of *Alexander*, they enter into actuell rebellion; they inuade the Emperors ministers and fauorits, some of whom they expell, and some they murder. Then vsing his further counsell and assistance, they proceed to the building of a new City, called *Alexandria*, in honor of *Alexander* and contempt of *Frederick*, culling out of euery City, fifteen thousand men for inhabitation; vnto whome they deuide the territory, and assigne portions whereupon to build their dwellings.

Naucl. gen. 40.
Vrßbergens.

Vpon intelligence of these rebellious combinations, *Cesar* leuieth an armie, and prepareth for *Italie*: where inforcing certaine of the rebels to composition, he besiegeth *Alexandria*; but this siege proued nothing honourable: for *Alexandria* being continually relieued from the interessed cities, defended it selfe valiantly. And more then that, *Henry Leo* Duke of *Banaria* and *Saxonic*, corrupted with money contrarie to all imagination of the Emperour, neither regarding the bond of kindred, nor the memorie of fore-passed kindneses, most traiterously departed with his forces: so that *Frederick* finding himselfe too weake to withstand the Italian rebels, disperfed his hoast, and with great difficulty in the habit of an Hostler fled into *Burgundy* by the way of *Mount Iupiter*. But *Leo* escaped not scot-free: for the Emperour hauing now recovered *Germanie*, and re-inforcing his armie, limiteth the Duke a day; appeacheth him of treason; and ouerthrowing his forces,

Nau. gen. 40.
Abbas vrsper-
gensis.

forces, depriueth him of his Lordships & Dukedome.

Some Princes fauouring *Henrie*, gaue out, that the Emperor could not condemne him, vnlesse the sentence had beene giuen within his owne dominions. Which *Frederick*, who before times had shewen himselfe a seuerer censurer in inflicting exemplary punishment against rebells and outlawes, little esteemed; but bestowed the Dutchy of *Noricum* vpon *Otto* of *Wittelsbach*, that of *Saxony* vpon *Bernard Anhaldin*, and the residue, vpon other of his seruants. Who being re-enforced by the assistance of their friends within the space of one moneth, expulsed *Leo* almost out of all his liuelyhoods; which of any subiect of the Empire, were the greatest and goodliest; insomuch that nothing was left him, saue only the Dutchy of *Brunswicke*: An excellent president for gentlemen to looke vnto, and to learne; that the authority of soueraignty lawfully warranted by Gods owne mouth, is not rashly to bee vilified, but to be reuerenced with fidelity, obedience, and honor, and that for conscience sake.

And because I make no question, but that the review of this example, may be a motiue to bring many a rash spirit into the due consideration of authority, I will bee bold here to relate certaine other exemplary punishments inflicted by this Emperor vpon others of his rebellious subiects.

Herman Earle *Palatin* of the *Rhene*, and his complices, for that in his Italian absence, hee had violated the publique peace, by raising armes against *Arnold* Archbishop of *Mogunce*, he compelled publicly for satisfaction to lead a dog vpon the birth day of the Lord of *Wormes*.

Gualfag

Tretemius in
Cronico Hier-
sang. sub abbate
volmaro. fo.
175.
Nau. ge. 39.
fol. 65.

Gualfag Earle of *Angleria*, and Prince of *Millan*, for that after the promulgation of the Curse by the Pope he sided with *Alexander*, and in his quarrell committed many insolencies in the City, to the derogation of the honor of the Empire; hauing taken him, three daies he tied him as a dog vnder his table; whipt him with scourges, and at last in chaines sent him into Germany. These were the punishments of those daies; the like whereof if transgressors in like cases should vndergoe in these times, there were no doubt, but to find greater tranquility, and better obedience to the lawes throughout the Empire. But to our purpose.

Frederick hauing thus abated the greatnesse of *Henrie*, leuied a new army in *Germany*, and again marcheth towards *Italie*.

Platin. in vita
Alex.
Nau. gen. 41.
Blondus & alij.

Variable I know, is the opinion of writers about the gests done in *Italie* in this iourney.

Some report that he fought in such great danger against the *Millanois*, that his horse being slayn, himself had almost miscaried: and that vpon the compulsory threats of the Bishops, he was faine to treat a peace with the Church. Others write, that by the perswasion of the Bishop of *Brixia*, he went into the *Holy-land*, and that there, after the atchiuement of many famous victories, hee was betraied by *Alexander* to the Soldan, yet at length again restored to liberty by the Popes liberality.

Io. Cremonensis.
Barnus. Author
vite Frederici
Germanice
scripte.

Albeit I know that these reports are heaued at by many: notwithstanding sithence they are vouched with the authority of such authors, whose diligence in reporting the life of so worthy an Emperour, may deservedly bee tolerated: I am onely disposed to relate them as I finde them, especially, beeing such as in like-

L

likelihood held correspondencie, with the papall disposition against Emperours, not altogether impertinent to our Argument: for beliefe, I leaue it to euery mans iudgement. Then thus at large.

Frederick being arriued at *Brixia*, *Hartmannus* Bishop of the place, and the Emperours Secretarie, by the secret instructions of the *Pope*, dealeth with his Maiestie rather to turne these armes against *Turks* and *Indels*, then against the most Holy father and the Christian people. *The Holie land* (quoth hee) which your Grandfather *Conrade* to his infinite expence reconquered from the *Turks*, is now reconquered by the *Egyptian Soldan*. I beseech your Maiestie euen in the name and behalfe of the publique welfare, that vnto the glorious recouerie of these Kingdomes, you would diuert your whole cogitations. This if you please to entertaine, you may assure your selfe, that the *French King* will noblie assist you to expell this *Saceracen*. This honest-seeming oration (saith the Historie) the Emperour well liked, and transporteth into *Turkie* this armie, first leuied against the *Pope*, and the *Italian* rebels. Taking his iourney by *Hungarie*, he cometh to *Constantinople*, transporteth his army, and taketh many cities from the *Soldan*. He inuadeth the lesser *Armenia*, and comming to *Ierusalem*, hee winneth the Citie, and casteth out the *Pagans*. But whilst the world goeth thus prosperously forward in the East, *Pope Alexander*, that most wicked Traytour, imagining it would not be so with him and his complices, if his Maiestie should returne so powrefull into *Italy*, resolueth to seeke his destruction by villany. He causeth an excellent Painter to draw the protraiture of *Frederick*, and sendeth it to the *Soldan*, with this Item; *That if he*

Did not the Bishops of England so by Henry the first,

desired

desired to liue in peace, There was the Emperours counterfeit; make meanes to destroy him. The *Soldan* hauing receaued the Breue, and the Picture, meditateth how he might gratifie the Bishop, pleasure himselfe, and be reuenged on his enemie. Opportunity in the Camp, or in conflict is seldome, or neuer offered. But as *Cæsar* led back his troupes securely from the conquest of *Ierusalem*, he deuidenth them into Companies, for the better commodiousnesse in their retreat to provide them of necessaries. In *Armenia*, what by the heat of the sunne, & the tediousnes of the iourney (imagining that no danger could proceed frō those solitary woods) with a few horsmen, & his Chaplin he departeth from the Army. Being a little remoued, and the horsmen commanded to depart, he prepareth to put off his garments, to wash himself in the riuer, to assuage the heat of his body. There with his Chaplin he is taken, and through the woods brought prisoner to the *Soldan*. The horsmen in vain expect the returne of their Master, yet diligently scourd vp and down the country, both that and next day to heare what newes. The report goeth that he is drowned. Great is the grieve of the Camp, & for a moneths space they drag for him in the riuer. But not finding him, they chose new Captaines & depart.

The Emperor being brought before the *Soldan*, faineth that he is his Chamberlaine. The *Soldan* by the protracture knoweth him to be the Emperour, and commandeth the picture to be shewed, and the *Popes* letters to be read. Whereat his Maiestie being astonished, and perceiuing that there was no further time of denial, cōfesseth the truth, & asketh honorable vsage. The *Soldan* after many discourses with his Maiestie,

L 2

inclo-

incloseth him & his Chaplin in prison, and according to his calling, entreateth him accordingly. At three moneths end, they inter-parly againe: when the *Soldan* perceiuing by conference, that *Fredericke* was an vp-right man, in whom no vertue requisite in so great a personage was wanting; admiring his wisdom, his carriage his faith and integrity; hee fell into imagination with himselfe, that it would be much for his honor and glory to set at liberty so great & so magnificent a Monarch. Whereupon he sendeth for the Emperour, and proposeth his conditionall liberty, viz. *That hee should giue him hostages, and pay for his ransome three hundred thousand sicles.* The Emperour answereth, that he is able to do neither; first, that he had no man there to be his pledge, and secondly, that his treasure being exhausted by this long war, he could not pay so excessive a masse of mony. The *Soldan*, well knowing that he spake nothing but truth, deliuered him on condition; *That hee should euer during his life keepe firme peace: pay one hundred thousand duckets, and leaue his Chaplin behinde him until the mony were paid.* The couenants are drawn: the Emperour prepareth for his iourney: willet his Chaplin to be of good courage: and promiseth him neuer to giue ouer, vntill the mony were procured, & himself safe returned into *Germany*. The *Soldan* bountiffully honoreth the Emperour; prouideth for his iourney, and conducteth him to *Brixia* by the seruice of 34. horse; and certaine companies of foot.

The Princes vnderstanding of the Emperours returne, in frequent assemblies congratulate his safety. *Cesar* requiteth his conuoy with an honorable larges, and adioyeth some troupes vnto them to safe conduct them

them to the frontiers of the Empire. Then proclaimeth he a Diet at *Norimberg*, and before all the Princes of the Empire he vnfoldeth the treason of *Alexander*; readeth the letter; and declareth in what maner hee was taken, and vpon what conditions deliuered. The Nobility promise to assist him, so that hee should keepe his day of payment with the *Soldan*; and in anger aduow, that they will neuer forsake him, vntill they see him reuenged on the Traytour *Alexander*. An Armie is inrolled in *Italie*, no man repining; and *Rome* approached. Thether hee sendeth his Embassadors, and requireth of the Romanes (concealing yet a while his priuate wrongs) *that vpon hearing of either Bishops cause*, they would restore concorde to the Church, by determining the right of the Papacie to one of the Elected. If thus they would doe, he promised to giue them peace, as also to restore, what in right they could challenge.

The Pope perceauing, that by these good courses, the Emperour was become Lord of his desires; by night he flieth to *Caicta*, afterward to *Beneuent*, and lastly, in the habite of his Cooke to *Venice*. Where, after he had lien hid certaine moneths in a Monasterie, he is at length made knowne, and in Senatorial habite by the commandement of Duke *Sebastian*, honorably receiued, and in his *Pontificalibus* accompanied to the temple of *Saint Mark*.

Frederick being giue to vnderstand of this reception, stormeth at the *Venetians* for receiuing their common aduersarie. He desireth them to send vnto him, the destroyer of the Common wealth. The *Venetians* deny. *Frederick* sendeth his Son with an Armada to demand the

*Hec subsequen-
tia Nauegen.
40. narrat. ut et
alij pontificij,
precedentibus
tamen omisiss.*

man; but with prohibition at any hand to fight, before himselfe was come in person. *Otho* a Prince yong, frolicke and aduenturous, desirous of honour and glory, copeth with his enemies, is taken and made prisoner. Vpon whose captiuitie, *Alexander* mounted vpon the wings of this prosperous successe, vtterly denieth to treat with *Cesar*, vnlesse he would suppliantly come to *Venice*, and there accept the already written conditions of peace. Wherewith *Cesar* being moued not vpon any base conceit, or despaire of victory, but partly through his affectionate loue towards his child, but more for desire to settle a firme peace in *Europe*, assented, and impawned his Honor to come vpon the day prescribed.

Where according to promise, appearing, and proceeding to capitulation, *Alexander* sent him word, *That he would not absolue him from the censure of Excommunication untill he come into the Temple of S. Marke.*

Here is He now ariued, accoutred in humble and religious habiliment: The Pope, before a multitude of people, most papally commandeth him to lie agroose on his belly, and suppliantly to aske forgiuenesse. The Emperor, German-like, simply suspecting, that a Bishop, who ought to haue been the mirour of modesty, would haue abused him with no grosse or dishonourable behauior, obeieth the Popes word, and so groueleth at his feet. At the sight whereof: He not only insulteth, but that worse is; most tyrannically he treadeth vpon his prostrated neck, and then blasphemously yel-leth forth this misapplied place of Scripture. *Thou shalt tread vpon the Aspe and the Basiliske, and thou shalt bruse downe the Lyon and the Dragon.*

Did

Did euer History record of so sauage a demeanor? Surely some barbarous souldiers, who in battell haue taken Princes prisoners, haue intreated them more humanely, then stood with their estates: *Sapores* the Persian vsed to set his foot vpon the neck of *Valerianus* the captiuated Emperor, as he mounted his Horse: The Tartarian *Tamerlan* (the correlatiue tyranny to this of the Popes) inclosing *Baiazeth* Emperour of Turkes in an yron Cage, carried him so dishonoured through all his iournies. But what is this to a Pope? By how much the disproportion holdeth betwixt a souldier and a Churchman, betweene a Christian and an Ethnique, by so much is the immaturity of the Pope the more damnable. They being Barbarians, might plead some probability of excuse, in that they misused but their enemies, and those by the law of Nations captiuated for seruility: But the Pope is a Christian, *seruus seruorum*, a peace-maker, and a Priest; whose office is only to pray and to preach: Wherefore I can not blame *Bellarmino*, if he could make vs beleue; that this History may be doubted of, when I shall relate vnto you in the word of truth; That this mirror of Christian Humility) *Cyclopica immanitate*, first, with a Gyantlike rudenesse saith mine Author) most ignominiously with his bestiall feet presumed to touch (nay to tread) vpon the sacred necke of a mighty Emperour, then (as I said) in peaceable maner lying agroose, and humbly desiring absolution of an vniust Excommunication.

But why do I against the Precepts of history, thus lash out, by aggregating of so barbarous a cruelty, to moue the mind of my Reader to compassion, sithence

I.

I can neuer do it, for that the president in it selfe goeth far beyond any delineation that humane wit can possibly polish it withall? *Vox faucibus heret, &c.*

Well, *Cæsar* knowing himselfe, and recalling his generous spirits; to shew that he was not a little moued at the indignity, openly calleth vnto the Pope; saying, *Non tibi, sed Petro*: meaning that he became so deuout a suppliant, not to this Tyrant, but his *Apostolique Cal-ling*. But the tyrannicall Pope, once againe bowing downe his reuerend necke with his beare-like pawes; reclaimeth, *Et Mihi & Petro*.

The good Emperor, that had neuer offended any man, no nor the Pope himselfe, but his pride; albeit he could not but agricue at this iniurious and base vsage; yet in regard of the common quiet (much preferred before his own dignity) held his peace: And after his absolution, thus renewed his grace with the Bishop.

✠ Henricus VI.

He reigned in the yeere 1191. about the second yeere of Richard the first.

Platina in the
life of Celestine
the third.



He Romanists thinking it no safe policy, too much at one instant to irritate the reuengefull spirits of secular Princes, smothered a while their domineering humours, vntill the dayes of *Celestine* the third. Who although he had bestowed vpon *Henrie* for wife, *Constance* the Nun, the daughter of *Roger* the fourth King of *Sicil*, taken forth from the Monastery of *Panormo*, vpon condition, that

Tancred

Tancred the base Son of *Roger* now deposed, (whome *Clement* the third had before to no purpose labored also to displant) should hold both kingdoms in fee of the Church: Notwithstanding some there are, who write, that because this *Henry* punished somewhat seuerely not only the *Apulian* and *Sicilian* Laickes, for entring into actuall rebellion against him, but also proceeded with like rigor against the Clerks and Bishops, being guilty of the same conspiracy; from some pulling their skins ouer their eares, from other their eies; impaling some vpon stakes, and incircling some of their heads with a flaming Garland; hee escaped not *Celestines* curse, who by this time being weary of peace, intended nothing else but the dispossession of *Henry*, from the Crowne of both *Sicils*.

*Bergomensis in
supplemento &
eum sequens
Nau. gen. 40.*

✠ Philip the Suenian.

He reigned in the yeere of Christ 1199. about the last yeere of Richard the first.



Oweuer the world fared in this age, certaine it is, that presently after the death of *Henrie*, the rage of the Bishop grew fiery hot against his successor. For *Henrie* now lying vpon his death bed, had instituted *Innocent* the 3 (the successor of *Celestine*) guardian to his yong infant, fower yeeres of age, yet chosen to the succession of the Empire by the Suffrage of the Princes; To him he also recommended his wife *Constance* and ordained his own brother *Philip* Duke of *Hetruria* and *Suenia* (during

M

the

*Nauel. gen. 40.
Cuspinian in vi-
ta Henrici &
Philippi.*

the minority of the child) to bee his Lieutenant, through the whole Empire and the Kingdome of *St. cil*. But the Bishop falsifying his faith of Guardianship, turneth traitor, and by setting al *Germany* in combustion, fideth with the *House of Sweuia*.

For as *Philip* posting towards his sick brother, by the way about *Mount Flasco*, not far from *Viterbium*, vnderstood that his brother was departed, tranported with a desire of Soueraignty, hee hastneth as fast to *Haganoa*, the place of the Assembly of the Princes, and there worketh as many as he can, to fauour his proceedings.

Noceutius, who in shew deadly hated the Sweuians as persecutors of the Church, but in truth sorely thirsting after the reall possession of *St. cil*, at first (to giue *Philip* to vnderstand, that without his Holinesse acted a part in all Princely policies, it were folly to vnder-take great matters) he excepteth against him by an Ex-communication, which stood on Record filed against him, in the daies of *Celestine*. Secondly to shew himselfe a displeased Father, he sendeth the Bishop of *Sutrium* vnto him, to demand at his hand certaine Hostages, whose eyes not long agoe his brother *Henry* had caused to be put out. Thirdly, failing, against imagination of his will; for that *Philip* by confessing and repenting of his fault, had procured absolution from the Legat, and remitted the Hostages: *In odium Philippi* he sheweth the blind pledges to the people, and depriuing the Bishop of *Sutrium*, for that without commission hee had absolved *Philip*, he confineth him into one of the Ilands: And finally, now to perfect his proiects, he re-commendeth vnto the fauours of the Electors *Ber-*
thold

thold Duke of *Zazingia*, a Prince strong and valiant, and whom he knew full well to be a deadly enemy to the Sweuians, because he had before times beene molested by the wars of *Conrade*, the brother of *Philip*. The letters of his election written at large, are yet to be seen. *C. venerabilem. de Electi potestate.*

But *Berthold*, being a wise and an Honorable Prince, knowing himself far inferior to *Philip*, and that he had been already nominated for Emperor by the generall good-liking of the Sweuians, Saxons, the Bauarians, the Bohemians and the Princes of the Rhene, so affected the fauor of his lawfull king, that in assurance of obedience, he gaue him for pledges his own Nephewes *Crinen* and *Berthold* Earles of *Vrach*, together with his personall oath of Allegiance. Whereat *Innocent* tooke so great an indignation, that he could not refraine, but belched out: *That either the Bishop should dispossesse Philip of his Crown, or Philip dispossesse the Bishop of his Mitre.* And forthwith he calleth from England *Otho* the sonne of *Henry Leo*, a proud and harebrained Prince, and by sending him the Imperiall Diadem, he setteth him vp against *Philip*; And to withdraw his subiects, he interdicteth him of all honor and authority.

Hereby arose a most pestiferous diuision in the state of *Germany*, but a masse of aduantages to the Pope and his Clergy. For as long as *Philip* and *Otho* by their intestine wars distracted the Empire, there scant fell void any Ecclesiasticall dignity, yea almost scant no poore vicarage, but being made litigious by the cunning of Rome, the dicesion of the incumbency was remooued into the Popes Court, and there peradventure com-
M 2 pounded;

pounded; but not without the fleecing of both parties purses. This the *Abbat of Vrsperg* in the end of one of his *Orations* doth set downe, for one of the trickes, wherby the Popedom is accustomed to trouble Christendome, meane-while enriching their priuate cofers. These be his words.

Reioyce (sayeth he) our mother Rome: for cataraets of treasure are opened vpon earth, that riuers and masses of money in great abundance may flowe into thy bosome. Reioyce for the iniquitie of the sonnes of men, for that rewards are accumulated vpon thee to reconcile mischiefes. Reioyce for thy Adiutresse, Discord; for shee is let loose from the bottomlesse pit, euen to breake thy backe with bagges of filner. Now thou enioyest that, which thou hast long thirsted for: Sing a merrie Song, for by the reciprocal malice of men, and not by thy religious workes, thou hast got victorie ouer the world. All men flock vnto thee, not for deuotions sake, or in puritie of conscience, but by rewards to compound their contentions, and to redeeme their trespasses.

And albeit that *Odoacer* King of *Bohemia*, *Herman* *Lantgrau* of *Thuringe*, the *Bishop* of *Argentine*, and *Adulph* *Archprelate* of *Colein*, being terrified by the papal curse, had sided with *Otho*, assisted with the forces of his Vncle *Richard*, King of *England*; yet being strong with his *Hetrurians* leauied in *Italie*, and his *Sweuians* raised in *Germanie*, he beginneth with *Alsatia*, next neighbour to *Swenia*, and wasteth it: then falling vpon the *Thuringer*, confederated with the *Bohemian*, hee inforceth him to submission, and routeth the *Bohemian*. This done, through thereconciliation of

*Naucl. gen. 41.
Vrsperg. fo.
323.*

of the *Colennois*, at *Confluence* hee treateth a league with the Dukes of *Brabant* & *Lotharinge*: with whom and his associates descending to *Aquisgran*, with great solemnity he is there crowned by the fore-said *Colennois*. Finally, meeting with *Otho* not farre from *Colen*, he put him to flight, and without his companions enforceth him to flie againe into *England*.

When the Princes perceiued these prosperous successes to attend *Philip*, being now thoroughly wearied with these ciuill combustions; by a generall consent, they conclude to send an honourable Embassie to his *Holineesse*; who vpon restitution of *Philip* into fauour, should intreat his fatherhood to confirme him in the Rights of the Empire.

He giueth audience, and returneth for aunswere; that vnlesse *Philip* will giue vnto *Richard* his brothers sonne (newly created Earle of *Thuscanie*) *Spolet*, and *Marchia Anconitana*, with the daughter of *Philip*, hee will neuer harken vnto the Emperours Ambassie. Behold here another trick of Popish discontent: By this match, hee onely meant and hoped to inuest his Nephew in the perpetuall inheritance of these goodly Lordships.

Thus haue these Holy fathers long since accustomed, vnder the habit of *Saint Peter*, to fish rather to enrich their Nephewes, their kindred, and their Goslings, then to be carefull ouer the Church and the common-weale; yea, in these respects they haue often moued warres; so that the meanes, by which God hath ordained to reconcile families, & to corroborat peaces; they haue inuerted to maintaine factions, and to serue their owne purposes.

See Guicciardine.

After the Embassadors had heard the proposed condition, altogether impertinent to the businesse, whereabout they had taken so much paines; they tooke it as a strange motion; *That the daughter of a King, should be affianced to the base Nephew of a Pope*: Howbeit, not to offend his Holinesse, they answered, that they had no commission to treat of any such ouerture: but desire, that by some people of his owne, hee would acquaint their Lord and Master with his Holinesse request.

Whereupon, with more heat, then good discretion, he adioyneth vnto the Embassadors of *Philip* (now vpon their returne) *Hugoline* and *Leo* Cardinals of *Holstia*, and *Saint Croffes* in *Ierusalem*. Who arriuing at *Augusta*, were honourably receiued, and highly feasted, but vpon notice of the proud and preposterous message of their Master (nothing ashamed to violate the Constitutions of his Lord *Peramount*) the King and his Counsell secretly laughing at the *Legats* discouraging vpon matters, nothing tending to Peace and Absolution; from *Augusta* the Court remoued to *Spiers* and so to *Northius*. And there after long debatement, the peace was ratified, and the Bishops Nephew reiectd; vpon condition, that the daughter of *Philip* (whom the foole-Bishop eagerlie instanced) should be affianced to *Otho*; And that he lining in priuate, during the life of *Philip*, after his death, should succeed in the Empire.

Not long after this treatie *Philip* died: for leauing *Saxonie*, and for recreation sake retiring vnto *Babenberg* in *Sweuia*, he was traiterously slaine in his Chamber, there solely remaining, after the opening of a vaine, by *Otho* of *Wittelsback*, Nephew vnto him vpon whom *Frederick* (as we told you before) had bestowed *Baw-*

ria.

ria. The cause of his discontent arose, for that being a suter to his daughter, in regard of some imputation of disloyaltie, he had beene repulsed, and the Lady, by the Emperour, her fathers good liking, affianced to *Otho*.

After this lamentable regicide, *Otho* by the generall consent of the Nobility, assembled at *Francofurt*, is saluted Emperour.

Otho the fourth.



Tho, by consent of the Princes being thus installed in the Imperial throne, setteth all things through *Germany* in good order; and then with a warlike Armie marching by the vally of *Trent*, hee passeth by *Lombardie*, and so commeth to *Rome*, to receiue the Imperiall diademe: where, by the Pope, the Clergie, and the people hee is heartely welcommed, and honourably receiued: And so much the rather, the Pope studied to honour and gratifie his Maiestie, for that hee had heretofore alwaies assisted his partie, against *Philip* his predeceffour.

*Nauct. gen. 41.
Orspurg. in the
life of Otho
the 4.*

But this extraordinarie kindnesse was of no long continuance betweene these new friends; but being soone ripe, soone vanished, and turned into hatred. For vpon the very day of the Coronation, an affray began betweene the *Dutch* and the *Romanes*, about the donatiues which the Emperors accustomed to bestow at this time amongst the souldiers; so that (as report

went:

went) about one thousand and one hundred men were slaine, and as many wounded. Whereupon *Otho* being moued at so great an indignity; complained vnto the Romans for reparation of amends; which they promised, but performed so slowly, that the Emperor began to enter into suspition, that the Pope himselfe became a fautor of the tumult; whereupon hee departed, towards *Millan*, and there laying aside his Imperiall ensignes, hee infested *Tuscanie*, *Mark Ancona*, and *Romandiola*, vulgo, *S. Peters patrimony*. Moreover in warlike manner he inuaded *Apulia*, subdued the Dutchy of *Capua*, and tooke from *Frederick* the second many other Cities pertayning to the kingdome of *Sicil*, at that time mistrusting no such outrage.

Vpon intelligence hereof *Innocent* admonisheth *Otho* to restore the feodary possessions of the Church, and to abstaine from further violence. But *Cesar* not only reiecteth his admonitions, but infesteth those possessions, with more and more souldier-like depredations. *Innocent* flyeth to Excommunication, deprieth him of his Imperiall titles, and absolueth the Princes of their oth of allegiance towards *Otho*. And that more is, prohibiteth vnder paine of damnation, that no man serue, account, or call *Otho* Lord or Emperor. It is reported, that he caused the Princes anew to sweare vnto *Frederick* King of *Sicil*, being as yet an Infant; and him he made choice of to succeed in his place.

Nacl. gen.

Whereupon *Otho* returned into *Germany*; where, albeit in the Assembly of *Noremberg*, vpon complaint of the Popish tyranny, and the cowardize of the Princes, he had entred a strict bond of alliance with many; and had moreouer taken sharpe reuenge vpon *Her-*
man

man Lantgraue of *Thuringe* by waisting his territories, for that at the Popes commandement he had violated his faith: yet at last being forsaken of his people, hee was glad to retire into *Saxonie*, where the fourth day after his royall mariage at *Northuis* with the daughter of *Philip*, he fell sick, and died.

Fredericke the second.

He reigned 1212. About the thirteenth yeare of King *IOHN*.

Frederick the second, by the vniuersall consent of all Writers, a Prince worthy all attributes of honour, as well for his gouernment in peace, as his cariage in warre; vpon the deiection of *Otho*, at the commandement of *Innocent* the third, tooke vpon him the Imperiall Crowne at *Aquisgran*. And in the yeare next following (*Otho* departing at *Perusum*) he was crowned at *Rome*, and honoured with the name of *Augustus*, by *Honorius* the third. With him hee brought many rich gifts into *Italie*, and amongst the rest, the Countie of *Funda*; which with manie notable donatiues he bestowed vpon the Church; And then setting *Germanie* in order, he prepared himselfe for the iourney of *Ierusalem*, according to the custome of his Auncestors: Who being deceaued by their false pretexts of Religion, imagined that they were not worthie to merit the Imperiall Diademes, but by vowes and donatiues;
N First,

*Cuspinian in
vita Frederici.
Pandulphus
Collomitus.*

First, forgetting that no Pope, but the Princes, and the people, were interested in the election of the Emperours: And secondly, not fore seeing, that the Priests, who had too sharply felt the armes of the Princes to their extreame losse, were not so carefull to recouer *Ierusalem* for the Christian good, as they were prouident to direct, or distract the forces of stirring Potentates; That mean while they might liue at pleasure, and provide for their bellies. For the Princes being sequestred into the farthest parts of the world (this pretext I confesse, caried a great shew of zeale & honesty) who was left to hinder them, from making free vse of their wits at home, and that without restraint or contradiction:

Howeuer *Frederick* in the beginning caried himself bountifull and obedient towards *Honorius*; notwithstanding, his vertues could neither safe conduct his life against their subtilties, impieties and clandestine counsels, neither his bountie extenuate or lenisie their conceived malices against his person. For, three most wicked Bishops successiueley succeeding one another, for almost thirtie yeares space, so hardly kept him to it, that his most barbarous enemies, the *Turks* and *Saracens*, may be reported to haue made faire and gentle warres against this most warlike Emperour, in regard of those trickes and tragedies, which the Romanists played him.

First, *Honorius* immediatly after the receit of his Donatiues, without any pretence of receiued displeasure, seditiously maintained and acquitted from their oathes of allegiance the two Earles of *Tuscanie*, *Richard* and *Thomas*, condemned of treason, & the Emperours pub-

*Pandulfus in
uita Frederici.
Dijperg. &
Alij.*

lique & dangerous enemies. Secondly, that with more facility they might make vse of his fauour to purpose, and vsurpe vpon the Kingdomes of *Sicil* and *Apulia*, he branded the Emperour with the censure of excommunication, and (as far as lay in his power) deprived him of all Imperial soueraignty. After this, he prouoked the *Lombards* to rebellion; so that they repelled the Princes of *Germany*, approaching to a diet to be held at *Cremona* by the Emperours direction: and had done more, had not God taken him out of this world, to accompanie his predeceffours in the vale of death.

Gregorie the ninth succeedeth: He to seeme nothing inferiour to his predecessor, euen in the first step to his Papacie, raged worse then *Honorius*. He accuseth him, that according to his vow, vndertaken in the time of *Honorius*, to passe vnto *Ierusalem*, hee had not accomplished it within the prefixed time: and therefore renewing the excommunication, hee condemneth him without allowance of defence, vnsummoned and vnheard; yea, he vtterly denieth either to heare, or to admit vnto the presence of his counsell, the honourable Embassadors of his Maiestie, bringing honest & lawfull reasons in excuse of their Master; yea, petitioning to be admitted vnto satisfaction, in case their Lord had in any thing offended: But the Pope notwithstanding all offer of submission, daily intimateth his fulminations; confirmeth in their rebellions, *Iohn* King of *Ierusalem*, the Earls of *Tuscany*, the Emperours rebels, & the Nobles of *Lombardy*; And forbiddeth the Emperours seruants to appeare at the day of the Assembly, proclaimed by the Emperour, to be held at *Rauenna*; And spoileth the crossed souldiers, bound for the journey of *Ierusalem*, of all

their necessities. The Emperor obseruing this passage, to lenifie his papall anger, passeth the sea, laicth siege to *Acon*, and finisheth many glorious attempts to the honor of Christendom and the Christian religion. Meane time, the Pope (O the deepe abyss of Popish impiety) taketh his aduantage vpon the Emperours absence, subdueth *Apulia*, prohibiteth the crossed companies to passe the seas, & committeth infinit such like mafferies, not only vnbecoming a Christian Bishop, but much more Christ his Vicar. For first, he slaicth those Embassadors, whom the Emperor had sent vnto him to congratulate his good successe against the Soldan, & then to terrifie those cities of *Apulia*, which refused his yoke of subiection, he giueth out publique rumors, that the Emperor was departed this world. Hee also maketh meanes vnto the *Soldan* (mean time to work his will in *Apulia*) that he should not capitulate to surrender the Holy lād vnto *Cesar*. Here behold the piety of this Holy father: Here behold his study, & conuersion of leuius of prouisions taken vp through christendom to be employed against Gods enemies. This is his persecution of Infidels, this his Croisado against Turks & Pagans, viz. To inuert christian armes against christians, to forsake a christian Emperor warring in a forraine land against the enemies of the Christian faith; and especially (I dare auow) for the safety of *Italie*, as experience hath since made manifest. For mine own part in the behalfe of the whole christian cōmon weale, I can but condole for the generall captiuitie of *Israel*, but as for the Popes I say to them, as sometime *mutata regione Tasso* prophetically said of the Greeks vpō the very same Argument:

Tatine their guide, and except Tatine, none

Of

*Of all the Greeks went with the Christian Host:
O sinne! O shame! O Greece acurst alone!
Did not this fatal war affront thy coast?
Yet satest thou an idle looker on,
And glad attendedst which side won or lost;
Now if thou be a bondslauē vile become,
No wrong is that, but Gods most righteous doome.*

O Rome.

But, as in another place the same Poet spake of the Grecian Emperor, so the German Monarch might at this time say of the Romish Prelate:

*And for I doubt the Romish prelate lie,
Will vse gainst me some of his wonted craft
To stay their passage, or diuert awry
Elsewhere his promis'd forces, &c.*

Necessity will inforce me to returne; And so he did, towards *Italy*. Where, albeit by the way he had intercepted the Popes letters directed to the *Soldan*, containing the afore said instructions; yet hauing recouered the losses suffered in his absence; most heroically for the loue of Christ he beareth & dissembleth all forepassed greuances: And in pure deuotion to peace, of his own accord he beseecheth his holinesse to receiue him into fauour, & in requital thereof, he protesteth to become his future true liegeman for the kingdome of *Sicil*. What say you vnto this, you hypocrites? Heere you see a king, humble, contrit, & studious of peace; through this whole discourse haue I yet read of no such Pope. What are the signs of christianity, and true religion? war or peace? Humility or pride? If you say peace & humility, where then must we seek them? In the breasts commonly of christian Princes. And no maruell, for both the written word of God, and conscience, haue warranted their authorities: yours not so, at leastwise, in such worldly maner, as you vse it. For being nouell, and

*Cuspinian in the
life of Freder-
ricke.*

concrisant in pompeous habiliments, in Lordlie appellations, in rich patrimonies, in commerce, in treaties, in investiture of Princes, in maintaining of garrisons, in rigging of gallies, in entertaining of noble men and captaines for seruice, how can it chuse but by plots and deuises, to maintaine these worldly charges, and titular honours, cleane contrary to the example of Christ, the doctrine of the Apostles, and the modesty of the Primitiue Church) you shall bee constrained to mingle the leuen of the Lord, with the abomination of Baal; and in stead of preaching and praier (your sole function) to spend your times in perfecting and preuenting your own imaginations, and your enemies designements. For I know the kingdome of heauen is not of this world, neither will flesh and blood respect you as they ought, if as you say, you should carry lowly shewes, and truly practise Christian humilitie: but you know, where your reward is laid up; Imitate this good Emperor, and thinke with your selues, that in this he followed your sayings, and not your doings. Imitate you your sayings, but saie, and doe, and then will the world turne their bitter reprehensions, to sweetest Sonnets in praise and admiration of your liues & Embassies. And here I craue pardon for digression.

Againe to the History: Albeit, most of the Princes of Germanie, Ecclesiasticall and secular, namely, Eberhard of Salisburg, Seyfrid of Ratisbone, Sibot of Augusta, Bishops: Leopold of Austria, Orho of Meronia, and Bernard of Carinthia, Dukes, with many other Nobles, did to their vtmost, labour with the Pope to reconcile his displeasure against Caesar then residing at Capua: yet could not his Maiesty obtaine promise of pardon, vntill he had giuen assurance to pay into the Churches exchequer by the hands of the Master of the Teutonick order,

Cuspinian. Platina in the life of Gregory.
Nauch. gen. 41.
Platina citans.

order, the summe of one hundred and twenty thousand ounces of gold. Is this to forgiue thy brother feauenty times seuē? Or can sinne and trespasses be washed away by Masses of mony? O impudent merchant, Antichristian impostor! The price being made, pardon followeth, and the Emperor inuited to a riotous feast, where amongst many dishes, *simulata Amicitia*, I assure you, is carried vp for a seruice. For the Emperor was scarce vpon his way towards Germanie, to repress the sonne of Henrie, who with the Lombards and Thuscians had rebelled against him, but he is openly giuen to vnderstand by the Princes, that by messengers in the name of the Bishop, they haue strict commandement, not to acknowledge any man of the Emperors family for King: and moreouer, that hee had conspired with the states of *Italie* to disgrace him of all imperiall iurisdiction.

Whereat Caesar, being full of discontent, hauing tamed his rebels, hee plagueth the mutinous Cities of *Hetruria* and *Lombardie*. The Pope is now become more then mad, and to disgorge melancholy (for otherwise it will kille him) againe the third time he curseth the Emperor with book, bell and candle. And to be sure at this blow to rumble him quite downe from the height of all Imperiall dignity; first hee treateth a league with the Venetians: Then by the counsell of the Kings of France and England, hee summoneth a counsell to be celebrated at Rome in the Lateran: wherein is a great dispute about the vtter abolishment of the regall authority of *Fredericke*. Before the first sitting the heads of the Apostles *S. Peter* and *S. Paul*, with due solemnity are carried round about the City. And lastly,

*Collomitus,
quem prece-
teris, vide.
Platina in vita
Gregorij noni.*

lastly, in the Cathedrall Church of *Saint Peter*, he maketh a sermon full of Commiseration; proclaimeth the *Croisado*, and promiseth life euerlasting to as many, as shall take vp armes against his Maiestie.

Frederick being giuen to vnderstand, that the *Croisado* was now proclaimed against him, which was neuer from the daies of *Adam* heard of, to be divulged against any, but Turks and Infidels, waxeth exceeding angry, and directeth his forces to the walls of *Rome*; combatteth with the *Romanes*, rowteth them with a miserable slaughter, and spareth not a man, marked with the Crosse. To some crosse-ways he commanded foure words to be giuen. Others had their heads clouen a crosse, and the Clergie-men hee willed to be shauen to the quick, and the signe of the crosse to be imprinted vpon their bald pates; that so they, who were but said to be signed with the Crosse, might be so signed indeed.

Afterward, by a long and tedious siege, hauing forced *Furentia*, and hearing that the Pope had sent forth his Legats, to summon the English and French Prelats to the Councell; he shutteth vp by sea and by land all passages: and by the seruice of the *Pisans* taketh some Cardinals, and many Prelates passing by sea, and committeth them to prison. Two Cardinals hee drowne, and assigneth to the gallowes some Abbots and Bishops, but especially the Popes brother, for their vnardonable treasons.

Whereupon, this good holy father; sorrowing to see so many of the Lords annointed, for treason to be so sharply vsed by *Frederick*, became so moued and distressed at the indignity, that falling into sicknesse, through

through griefe of minde, hee departed the same way, which his beloued Sons, had but lately foregone.

Celestine the fourth succeedeth, and intendeth to proceed in the steps of his predecessor against *Frederick*, had not death summoned him to attend another businesse in a fitter place. For hee sate Bishop but eightene daies, and then was poisoned in drinking.

Innocentius the third succeeded; whilom the Emperours deuotest friend, but now his most bitter enemy; persecuting his Maiesty with more furie, then any of his deceased predecessors. And thus it fell out.

Baldwin the Grecian Emperour, hoping to play the part of a good Christian, in supplying the office of him, who was vtterly degenerated from all remembrance of his owne function and calling, laboured what hee could to set vnity betweene these two mighty monarchs: (for so is all Popery in truth, though not in shew.) But the Bishop, hauing no mind to hearken to so Christian-like a motion, dealeth with the *Geneois* (hauing a Nauie at that time riding at anchor in the Port of *Centumcelle*) to transport him vnto *Lyons* in *France*, and there illuding both Princes for their kindness and paines-taking, proclaimeth a concionable; causeth *Fredericke* to bee cited, yea himselfe in the end of his Homely, citeth him: and for default of appearance (although his sufficient substitute, *Thadæus Suesanus*, a most famous Lawyer, humbly desired his Furiousnesse but to allow him a sufficient returne, whereby hee might haue conuenable time for his repaire to *Lyons*) he denieth him respite; accurseth him; depriueth him of al Imperial honors; absolueth his subjects, & abetteth them in despight of *Frederick*, to make choice

*Petrus de vi-
nis li. 1. ep. 33.*

*Collomitus &
Cuspinian in vi-
ta Frederici.
Hieron. Mar-
tini.*

choice of some other. Most impudently alleading (so did euer the Pharises by Christ, because other wise they could not effect their wills) very vile, false and forged suggestions against him, as blasphemies, periuries, sacrilege, and such like stufte: which see in *C. Apostol. de sent. & re iudicata, lib. 6.*

The Emperor hearing hereof, setteth *Italie* in order, and with a compleat army marcheth towards *Lyons*, there face to face to bandy with this insolent Prelate. But thinke you a Pope to be so silly an Ass, as to deale with his forewarned enemy? no beleue it. His conscience can not assure his heart to look him in the face: He must deale altogether vpon aduantage, ciuill dissentions, alienations of obedience, trecheries, periuries, discontents of neighbour-Princes and subiects. At which weapons he now dealeth with the Emperour; and hauing his scouts, his espials and Intelligencers in euery corner through the world, by their seruices, he worketh the banished gentlemen of *Parma*, to returne to their country, and there to plot out myriads of rebellions against those Cities, which as yet in *Italie* stood well affected to the Emperors seruice. Whereupon before his Maiesty could come to *Taurinum*, in feare that the residue of the Italian people would one follow anothers example, he quitteth his Lyons-journy; and by letters, directed both vnto the King of *France*, as also to the prelates there assembled, in most honest termes he refuteth his enemies obiections, discourseth at large vpon the insufficiency and nullity of a Popish curse, and withall strongly prepareth by sea to reduce *Parma* to its former obedience.

But good Emperour, the greater thy learning, the more

*Cusp. in vita
Frederici.
Nauic. gen. 4. 2.
Epi. extat in e-
pistolis Petri de
V. meis. epist. 3. 2.*

more their grieve: the greater thy courage, the more vigilant is thy diuill-like enemy for thy ruine. Thou staieest at *Grossetum*, about the sea coast of *Sienna*, there to refresh thy wearied and ouerwrought spirits, with some disports of hauking; Thou wilt not get thee into *Germanie*, nor repasse the mountaines: Then will thy ghostly father meditate night and day to vndoe thee; then will he traiterously inueigle thy principall seruants, some by wrested sentences of Scripture, and some by corruption of mony, to worke thy downfall: Thus imitate they Christ in blessing their enemies; Thus honor they Kings according to *Saint Peter*; But (thanke thy God) the conspiracie was detected, and the traytors worthely punished.

Nocentius beeing fallen into a desperate fury, for that he had failed in these his most nefarious proiects, in seeing the Emperour for this time fully cleared from his diuelish intendments, grew yet resolute, not to giue ouer, vntill hee had really dispossessed him of his crowne & life. Which to effect, by threats, exhortations, & promises he aweth the Princes of *Germanie* to depose *Frederick*, and in his place to set vp *Henrie* Lantgraue of *Thuringe*. But this gentleman following the seruice of his master at the siege of *Vlmes*, was deadly wounded the same yeere wherein he was nominated King. So also his successor *William*, beeing imploied in other wars, performed nothing in fauour of his Furiousnesse. Whereupon the Pope obseruing his Anathems to be vilified, his rebellious hirelings in *Italy* to be thoroughly persecuted, & his aduersary to be resolute and vndaunted, after long and manifold trecheries plotted, and frustrated, at last, he procureth him to be poisoned in the

*De hac coniu-
ratione vide ep.
10. & 52. li. 2.
Rursus epi. 19.
& 62. li. 3.*

See D. B. 29 a.

two and thirtieth yeere of his raigne, and the fiftie seauenth of his age, on the very same day wheron he was declared Emperor, *Cæsar, Augustus*.

Thus, this most worthy Heros, this *Frederick* the second, Emperor of *Germany*, king of both *Sicils* and *Hierusalem*, Lord of *Sardinia* and *Italie*, & Duke of *Swenia*; an excellent Prince, adorned with all good gifts dained by God vnto man, aswell for the furniture of mind, as body; valiant, honorable, liberall; a great linguist, and excellent well learned, finished his mortall race: who, had he not been diuerted, from turning his Christian Armes against the Pagans, by the rebellions of Italy, and the Papall abetments thereto, verely he had merited more praise of the Christian world, then *Alexander* in due could haue exacted of his Macedonian subiectes.

Verely, If this our Age (miserably shaken with this inueterate Papall tyranny) by this president would learne, what emolument, peace and plenty would accrue both to the Church and common-weale, by due ballancing the temporall and Ecclesiasticall Authorities; then would I not doubt, but to behold the German Empire most great, most glorious, and the Papall vsurpation once again reduced to its pure and primitiue integrity. More in commendation of this good Emperor I can not say, but onely wish that the *Motto*, which was once vnderwritten *Brutus* his statue, and now due to him (*utinam uiueret*) might at this day be reuiued in the hearts of all Christian Potentates to reuindicate their pristinate prerogatiues.

But who shall recomfort the Laments of *Sion*? Albeit that this most worthy Generall was gathered in
peace

peace to the bed of his fathers, yet Death had no priuledge to giue period either to the extinguishment or satiation of these Popes neuer dying malice. For, against all humane beliefe, and the diuine precepts, it raged with so inhumane a seruencie against this Emperors posterity, that it neuer gaue ouer, vntil it had depriued his issue both of life and Empire. So did it in the powder treason.

For forthwith from the decease of *Frederick*, these (three Popish Sultans) *Innocent* the third, *Alexander* and *Vrbane* the fourth, following the continual streame of their proud fortunes, imploied the vtmost of their meanes to re-inuest the Kingdome of *Naples* in the Church, and to strip thereof the House of *Swenia*; but in vaine; for *Manfred* maintained and retained it valiantly as yet against all their violences; vntill *Clement* the fifth following the claime of his Predecessor *Urban*s Intrusion, called *Charles* Earle of *Prouince* and *Aniow* out of *France*, to take possession thereof: vpon condition, that *Manfred* being expulsed, Hee should yearly pay vnto the Church of *Rome* in the Name of a *Tenure* thirtie thousand Duckets; And for farther encouragement; *Not to accept the inuestiture thereof, though frelie offered, from the Romane Emperour*, hee caused him to be stiled, King of both *Sicils*. Which done, in the Lateran Church, hee is inaugurated with the Crowne of *Sicil* and *Hierusalem*. And after manie and various conflicts, hee not onely overthroweth, and slayeth *Manfred* at *Beneuent*, betrayed by his people: but also, extinguisheth the sole heire of the noble house of *Swenia*, the stem of many worthy Emperors, *Conrade* the son of *Conrade*, who he got vnto his power by treasō neer *Naples*; & there by the wicked
dispen-

So alwaies Pap.
cauill.

dispensatorie counsel of the Pope, with more then Phalarian cruelty struck off his head, for going about to recouer his owne, but indeed, vpon suggestion that hee persecuted the Church.

For *Clement*, after he had heard the opinion of manie wise men, perswading him that *Conrade*, as being the onely branch of the most noble house of *Sweuia*, was to be preferred, and obliged to the Romane sea by fauours and affinitie, turned himselfe to *Charles*, and would needes know of him, what he also deemed: To whom the Traytor made this butcherly Reply. *Vita Conradini, mors Caroli: Mors Conradini, vita Caroli*. i. The life of *Conrade* will be death to *Charles*; The death of *Conrade*, life to *Charles*. By which his brutish opinion, hee thus whetted on a minde already prepared for murder; by manifest presumptions fore-shewing, that hee was already acquainted with some plot of treason against *Conrade*. For after he vnderstood, that *Conrade* with a puissant armie of *Germanes*, was passed *Viterbium*, where then his Holinesse resided, he was heard to prophesie, *That he was led as a Lamb to the slaughter*.

Thus, the posteritie of *Frederick* being for manie ages turmoiled by this succession of Bishops, after infinit practises at last was vtterly ruined by these bloudie monsters: yea, the Princes of *Germanie* were so involved in these fatal oppositiōs, that none of the either daring or willing to weare a Crowne at so deare a reckoning, *Alphons* of *Spaine*, and *Richard* of *England*, by mony and the Popes fauour (as the world saith) began to aspire vnto that Dignity, which for so many ages past, the *Germanes* alone had enjoyed, and honourably maintained.

But

But neither of them, either in ieaousie one of another, or in feare of their predecessors harmes, euer came to the reall possession thereof, so that for the space almost of 22. yeares, the Empire became an Anarchy, and so continued, vntill by the generall suffrage of all the Princes, *Rodulph* of *Hanesburg* was chosen Emperour.

Herein let all
Christians note
the beginning,
progresse and
sequell of all
Popish pra-
ctises.

Rodulphus Habsburgicus.

He raigned Anno 1273. About the second yeare of Edward the first.



After these lamentable Tragedies acted vpon the person of *Frederick* & his issue, is *Rodulph* of *Hanesburg*, elected King of *Romanes*. Who, albeit he had plighted his faith to *Gregorie* the tenth, that hee would come to *Rome*, and there be crowned; as also, had studied to deserue the friendship of him, and other his successours, with extraordinarie indeuours; For that, time had taught him, that euen against all humane reason, this viperous generation had clearely extinguished the two most worthy and glorious families, of *France* and *Suenia*; As also, for that, they had transferred the Kingdome of *Naples* from the race of *Frederick*, to the house of *Aniow*; and therefore thought with himselfe, that such Potentates, as they, were not rashly to be prouoked, especially being now shielded with the fauours of the *French*, and the peeuisshnesse of the

the Germane Bishops; As also, that it was worke enough, befitting the Maiestie of a good and gracious Emperour, to tender the welfare of his native Country, now almost ruined and rent by ciuill dissensions: Notwithstanding his godlinesse, his clemencie, his deuotion, his humanity, his modestie, and his obseruancie, yet could hee deserue no other retribution from these vngratefull Politicians, but intrusions vpon his Crowne, and taunts against his person.

Mutius. li. 21.
Naucl. gen. 44.

For *Honorius* the fourth, being Bishop at that season, arrogating vnto himselfe all Regall authority, directly against the good will of *Rodulph*, constituted *Prizimalna* Earle of *Ianua*, vicar Generall of the Empire throughout *Italy*. And after his Maiestie for mony had quite claimed vnto many Cities their liberties, this *Honorius* most wickedly sealed this scandalous transaction.

Naucl. vbi supra.

After the decease of *Honorius*, *Nicholas* the fourth had vtterly dispossessed this Emperour of *Romandiola* and *Raucenna*, vnder the false pretext of an expedition against the *Turke*, had not Death taken truce with his traiterous intents. By a new creation of two Kings in *Italy*, the one to gouerne *Lumbardey*, the other *Tuscannie*, he had plotted, that by the commodiousnesse of their scituations all alongst the *Teutonicke Alps*, from hence by armes he might alwaies haue meanes to curb the *French*, who now hold *Sicily*, and the goodly Kingdome of *Naples* in full possession.

Paralip. vii. 25.

Whereof *Rodulph* taking notice, resolving with himselfe neuer to be made a stale to an other mans despight, which by affectation of a titularie Crowne in *Italy*, publicquely at all times giueth forth, that at some time

time or other, he would find sufficient occasions of diuersion and redresse; but in plain termes he intimateth to his friends, that he was wholly deterred from iourning into *Italy*, for that he had formerly obserued, That the entrance of the *Cesars* thereinto was applauded, honoured, and full of hopes: but their returnes awkward, heauie, mournfull and miserable. Not impertinently alluding vnto *Esops* fable of the Wolfe; who told the Lyon lying sick in his den, That in truth he had no reason to enter, considering that he could well obserue the footing of euery beast in entrance, going forward, but not of one, returning backward.

Albertus Primus.

He reigned 1298. About the six and twentieth yeare of Edward the first.



Albeit *Albert* succeeding his father *Rodulph*, in the Empire, continued the same obseruancy towards the Roman Monarchy, as his father formerly had done: yet could he by no meanes escape the bitter quips & taunts of these cloistered asses. For, at what time by his Ambassadors according to custome hee prayed of *Boniface* the eighth, the Confirmation of his Election, *Boniface* hauing a sword by his side, and the Imperiall Crowne vpon his head, sheweth himselfe in publique to the assemblie, and with a high voice exclaime: *Ego sum Cesar & Pontifex*: Behold, here is *Cesar* and the Pope: And in furie

custi. in vita Alberti.

Paralip. vii. 25. per.

P

whereas

(whereas it mought haue been done without his priuie or authority) hee reiecteth the Election as friuolous and of no force; denieth confirmation, and with a full foule mouth, calleth him *Homicide*.

Afterwards, vpon a bitter quarrell arising between this *Maleface* and *Philip* King of *France*, for that his Maiesty would not acknowledge him for his supreme Lord, he chaged his first opinion; aprooued *Albert* Emperor; by his Breues inuested him with the Kingdom of *France*, and in a full Consistorie Excommunicated *Philip*. Yet againe when *Albert* re-answered, that he would not stir one foote against the King of *France*, vnlesse his Holynesse would confirme him and his heires in the Kingdome and Empire: The Pope, not able to conceale his imprisoned displeasure, most arrogantly replied: *Non futurum id Iezabele viuentis; That, that should neuer come to passe, so long as Iezabel liued* By which abusive name, he pointed at that most noble Dame *Elizabeth*, the wife of *Albert*, the daughter of *Menihard*, Earle of *Tirol*, and sister by the mothers side to *Conrade* late Duke of *Sweuia*. In shew cauelling at this noble Lady, as an implacable persecutrix of Clergy men against Gods commandements, but in truth, most barbarously enuying her in memory of her brother and her deceased Auncestors, for their claming and retaining of their hereditary royalties against the vsurpations of the former Bishops. Let the world be Iudge, if they continue not the like; yea the very same stratagems, against all Princes at this day, if they but crosse their ambitions. The man that feareth God would think, that a good and a vertuous life, especially in a Prince, should warrant his daies from vexation, and

Nauct. gen. 44.

and his graue from infamy. But here you see the contrary: *Albert* followeth the steps of his father; he is humble, in offense, glad to please, yet not well requited: His Lady neither medleth nor maketh with these contentious persons, and yet in regard that her Auncesters displeased the Roman prelatie, shee saoureth; and must be disgraced in most opprobrious manner: *Doff. B. fo. 68. S. E. H. fo. 48.* yea the depth of the graue can not secure her honorable friends from railing, so furious is the fire of a Popish conscience.

No maruell: for this is that *Boniface* the eight, who (like the Diuell in the Gospell) censured all principalities and powers to bee in his donation; who vsurped vpon both swords, and would needs haue inforced the whole world, to haue acknowledged him their Lord Peramont: glorying that to him were committed the keies of Heauen gate: That he ought to be iudged of no man, no though hee carried a million of soules with him to hell for company.

Henricus Septimus.

Hee raigned Anno 1308. About the second yeere of Edward the second.



After the deccase of *Albert*, *Henrie* of that name the seuenth, of the House of *Lucel-* *Mutius lib. 23.* *burge*, by the lawfull suffrage of the Electors, is nominated Emperor. *Clement* the fift (then High-Priest) liuing at *Auignon*, (well fare the iarre betweene him and *Philip* the French King) in
P 2 *odium*

odium Philippi, gaue so courteous and facil a way vnto this election, that sending his Legats through all the quarters of *Germanie* and *Italie*, hee gaue strict commandement, that *Henry* should be acknowledged Emperor, and really confirmed in the election; provided that, within the space of two yeares, hee should come to *Rome* to be crowned, and personally visit *Italy*, which now by reason of sixty yeares absence of the *Germane Emperours*, was miserably afflicted with intestine dissensions.

But the Pope could not long be Master of his own breast, hee must needs follow the accustomed knauerie of his vastrous predecessours. For when *Henrie*, in satisfaction of his promises, had made his perambulation throughout euerie Prouince of *Italie*; had wice rowted *Rupert* King of *Apulia* with the *Vr-tins*; approached *Rome*, and expected his Coronation in the Cathedrall Church of Saint *Peter*: The Pope, repenting him of his forwardnesse, by calling to minde of *Henries* powerfulnesse, and *Ruperts* friendship, at first commandeth the Cardinals not to proceede to *Henries* inauguration; and then againe vpon the Emperours serious expostulation, changing his interdiction; hee assenteth, conditionally, that hee take an oath of fidelity to the sea of Saint *Peter*.

Which when his Maiestie refused, alleadging the president to be new, and but lately vsurped in the dayes of some fewe of his Predecessours, *That the chiefest Prince of Christendome should be obliged by an oath of fealtie to the seruant of seruants* at last with much

adoc.

a-doe, but vtterly against the Popes minde, by the loy - *Cuspinian*. all seruice of *Steuens* of *Colonna*, he was crowned by the Cardinals. For, *Clement* himselte in deadlie hatred against Him, reuolted to *Rupert* King of *Apulia*, by a lawfull triall condemned of high treason; and reuerfed his sentence of condemnation, not so much for any defect in Law, but in extreame malice against his Maiestie.

*Vide c. pastora-
lis, de sententia
& re iudicat. in
Clement.*

Thus was the quarrell pickt against *Henry*; obserue the cause thereof, I beseech you, and tell me if the president hold not with their practises at this day. But by the suddaine and immature departure of this religious Emperor, nothing was effected.

For, *Henrie* now being resolved to take vpon him the Crowne of *Sicilie*, being thereunto nominated by the *Sicilians*, vpon the vigil of the Assumption of our Lady was come as farre as *Bonconuent*: Where, by *Bernard* the false dominican Monke, who before times had giuen many hypocriticall testimonies of seruice towards his Maiestie, by a new and neuer heard of example, at Masse mingled poison, and the powder of Adamant (which as men say bringeth speediest death) into the communion cup, and so slew his Lord and soueraigne.

*Rithmi de
morte Henrici
impressi hunc
proditorem ve-
nificum Pauli-
num vocant.*

All the wakes, Annals, records, songs, rithmes, verses and Epigrams written in those daies, doe make ample relation of this tragedy. But the whole *Rabble* (and blame them not) of the *Dominicans* do vtterlie deny it; giuing out, that in grieve of mind, for that he could not be fully reuenged vpon his enemies, hee gaue vp the ghost, after he had receiued letters from his Holinesse

P. 3.

in.

in testimoniall of this afore-said villaines innocencie. But howeuer; These faire glosses could not so exempt their Order from the suspicion of this murder, but that many of their Couent, together with their houses were burnt and destroyed by sword and fire in manie places throughout *Tuscanie* and *Lombardy*.

Lodouicus Bauarus.

He reigned Anno 1314. About the seventh yeare of Edward the second.



Henry (last spoken of) being thus dispatched, the tempest which in his life time lay smothered in embers, in hideous manner now breaketh out vpon the head of his successors. For *Frederick of Austria*, and *Lewes of Bauaria* being both by the discordant suffrages of the Electors, named for *Cesars*, *John the 22.* findeth an occasion to disquiet them both; and first in very ignominious fashion hee quarelleth with *Frederick*. And thus it fared: *Conrade* the Bishop of *Gurcia* was sent to *Rome* by the *Austrians*, to desire his Holinesse in fauour of *Frederick*, to give assent to the election, and to repress *Lewes*; where, in making his Oration, he chanced to discourse, vpon the praises of *Frederick* his grandfathers and great-grandfathers, concluding, that the Christian world was likely to reape nothing contrarie to expectation, considering, *That it was alwaies seene, that from good and valiant Parents,*

descended

descended good and valiant children; yet by your fauour, most arrogantly and impertinently replied his Holinesse; *Of all men liuing without question Salomon was the wisest, and yet he begot a sonne most foolish.* Not obscurely intimating thereby, that *Frederick* was degenerated from the vertues of his auncestors, and therefore vnworthy of the Imperiall diademe.

Vvas this displeasure, deeme yee, of continuance? no surely; for then had it not beene papall. But at that time *John* had no neede of *Fredericke*: *Lewes* Iudas-like was saluted King, and the beloued sonne. But now *Maphews* with his sonnes the *Visconti*, are vp in *Italy*, and assaunting *Genoa*. And thereupon must a league of reconciliation be priuily contracted with *Frederick* to the expulsion of *Lewes*, and the re-ordering of *Maphews*.

Eight yeares after his election, *Frederick* was foiled in field, and taken prisoner: Howbeit, the Pope prosecuteth *Lewes* with continuall malice; denounceth him an Enemie to the Church, a Schismatike, and an Heretike; First, for that immediatly vpon his Election, without his Holinesse permission, hee had stiled himselfe Emperour; secondly, for that hee presumed to relieue certaine of his yonger bretheren being condemned of heresie, and outlawed after excommunication; and thirdly, for his rash assistance sent to *Galeas Visconti of Millan* against his holy forces.

Whereupon *Lewes*, vnderstanding by the best Diuines and Lawyers of that age, that the acts and sayings of *John* were repugnant to Christ his Doctrine: That the Pope in truth ought to be subiect to the Emperour, and not the Emperour to him in temporall causes:

Cuspin. in vita Ludouici Pulchri. Naue. gen. 46.

Naue. gen. 45.

ses: tooke thereat such encouragement, that, he appealed from the Pope *male informato* (as the Lawyers speake) to the Pope *melius informando*, at the next generall Councel to be held, when he sate at Rome in *Peters* chaire. Meane time, valiantly and vigilantly hee preuenteth all iniuries, and diuulgeth the Tenor of the *Appeale* throughout all the Prouinces of *Germany*.

During these verball and scribeling contentions, it came to passe, that the Romans being throughly tormented with their ciuill dissentions, sent their submissiue Orators to *John*, with humble supplications to intreat his Holinesse; that leauing *Auignon*, he would re-uisite Rome, and confer the Imperial Inuestiture vpon the King of Romans: this if he refused, they certified him in plaine termes, that they would renue the ancient Lawes and gouernment of the Romane people. *John* not only denieth their requests, but with threats and minaces, in most ignominious maner dismisseth the Orators: At which his pride the Romans being not a little offended, by letters and Ambassies call *Lewes* to Rome as their lawfull Emperor.

Lewes granteth the motion, and with his army taketh his way towards *Italy*; and at *Millan* according to the accustomed manner is crowned by the Archbishop. After this, making choice rather by humility, then armes, to assuage the Bishops wrath, he sendeth messengers vnto him, humbly to desire his fatherhood to confer the vsuall and Imperiall honours vpon his Maiesty. Which when the Bishop not only gainsayd, but despightously dismissing his Ambassadors, peremptorily cited his Maiesty to *Auignon*; As report goeth: *Cesar* as hauing full experience of the Papall tyranny,

tyranny, yet willing to preferue the Imperiall dignity (collated from aboue) holy and inuiolable, vtterly refuseth slaue-like to prostrate himselfe before the Pope, or to appeare at *Auignon*. But to auoid the effusion of blood, he is content in peaceable maner by proxy to become a sutor for his collation. But herein finding the Pope as stiffe as himselfe, and his friendes the *Visconti* to his disgrace already accursed, he maketh no more adoe; but setting *Millane* in order, he iourneyeth to Rome, where with great applause by the commaundement of the people and the Clergie, together with his wife hee is Crowned by Cardinall *Steuens Colonna*, the whole Nobility assisting, and crying, *GOD saue Lodowicke Augustus Emperour of Romanes*. And foorthwith by all their good liking, he createth *Peter of Corbar*, a Minorit, a man learned and in-ured to Gouvernement, High Priest: Hee causeth the counterfet of *John* to be made in wood, and in the presence of *Cesar* most ignominiously consumeth it to ashes; pronouncing him an *Heretique*, a destroyer of the Church, and a *publique enemy* to the peace of Christendome.

John again, thundreth out cruell processe against *Lewes*, depriueth him of all imperiall preheminance, and excommunicateth him as a Rebelle and Arch-heretique against the Roman Church. Vherupon the Emperor, to whom *Italy* became displeas'd, partly for that he had already determined to make no long abode therein, & partly in feare of poison, wherewith he knew the Romanists were better acquainted, then with arms, made his retrait into *Germany*. Whether (no sooner arriued) but newes was spred abroad of *Johns* departure, to the vniuerfall

*Plat.in vita
Benedicti. l. 12.
Casp.in vita
Ludouici.*

*Apud Na.
Decretum hoc
extat gen. 45.*

nerfall ioy of all wel-minded Christians, in hope that by the election of a new Bishop, all old quarrels should lie buried with their framer. But not so: For *Benedict* the twelfth succeeding in the Popedom, succeeded also in all Popish qualities against this Emperor; confirming all the censures, and deprivations which his predecessor *John* had sued out against him.

Whereupon, *Cesar* perceiuing that these fiery spirits would neuer be at peace, vntill by the vtter ouerthrow and disgrace of all temporall Authority, they had fully and forceably strengthened their owne greatness, at *Franckford* he assembleth the Princes, with the wise-men of his Kingdom; persons of immatcheable dexterity in diuine and humane sciences; and there, by the aduise of the most zealous and best learned, hee publisheth a Decree vnder his scale against the iniurious proceesse of the dead Bishop: therein rendring a most Christianlike account of his faith, plainly & ingenuously confessing, that as it became a true Catholike he beleeued all the Articles of the Christian veritie.

To these by solemne proclamation hee annexeth many notable edicts, to the ancient Constitutions he addeth some new, and corroborateth the old, viz. *That the Electors of the Empire, and no man besides, should intermeddle in the election of the King of Romans: Whereunto the Princes and nobility gaue their full consent: Ordayning morcouer, that whoeuer was nominated King or Emperor, should be acknowledged for the true, supreme, and indubitate Soueraign of the Empire, being indeed though differet in name, yet the same in effect. That without any confirmation or approbation from the Apostolique see, he might absolutely gouerne and administer iustice through-*
out

out the Empire. And that after publication from the Princes, in case of lawfull proceeding in the election, the Pope is bound to anoint him: And in default of refusall or denial, that any other catholique Bishop is as capable as the Pope, to proclaim him Emperor, Cesar, Augustus; Considering that these formal and solemne ceremonies, are but things indifferent deuised by the Popes, conferring only titles and names, but no matter of substance. For what Roman Bishop consecrated the Constantinopolitan Emperors? what Pope before Charles his time, the ancient Augusti? or who before Constantine the Ethnike Casars? And then, the Emperor acknowledged no oth of fidelity, but of obseruancy and of defending the faith.

From this point, he proceedeth to prooue, that in case of vacancy, the Imperial election diuolueth not to the Papacy: and that, the prescription is derogatory to the liberty, dignity, the rites and maiesty of the sacred Empire, but in truth by long and aprooued custome from Antiquity, and still in vse, that all Iudicature, seal-ties and priuiledges of conferring and disposing of all rights, interests, & demands, belonged & do belong to the House of the Count Palatine of the Rhene, during the vacancy, notwithstanding the constitutions of the *Clementines*.

What pen can be so partiall, as not to giue due commendation to the prudence of this good Emperor, being seasoned with so plentifull a measure of discretion? who so modestly carried himselfe between the Princes & the Pope, that the former admired his wisdom, and the later celebrated his goodnesse? For in *Benedicts* *Naue. gen. 45.* prime-entrance into the pontificacy, vpon occasion of discontents between his holinesse and the French king
his

his Maiestie vnderstanding therof, by meanes made for reconciliation and absolution, vnto which the Bishop, after hee had entered into a large field of discourse in praise of *Germany* and this Emperour, condescended; promising to be mindfull of the motion; concluding, *That that Noble branch of the Church* (meaning *Lewes*) *which now began to be seperated, should again be re-ingrafted into the body of the tree.*

Vpō another occasion, when the Embassadors of the kings of *France* and *Apulia*, had scandalized his Maiestie for plotting of diuers indignities against the Court of *Rome*: his Holines excused him with great earnestnes, openly auouching, *that the Clergie had wronged him, and not he the Clergie.*

*Naucl. ubi sit-
pra.*

But howeuer, at this time he acknowledged the innocencie of *Lewes*, yet afterwards, when the king of *France* in despite of the Emperour & the Pope, had slyly preuented the returne of certaine Cardinals into his kingdom; and that *John* king of *Bohemia*, & *Henry* Duke of *Banaria*, had traiterously cōspired to elect a new Emperour, he suffered himselfe with small intreaty to be disswaded from his former resolution of Absolution: yea, after the king of *France* & his Maiestie had capitulated a peace, full sore against his mind; vpon request to haue it ratified by his Holines, he flatly denied it; cauelling, that *Lewes* being now declared an heretike, ought not again to be accounted a Christian at the kings plesure.

Thus may you see how the Popes were accustomed to play fast and loose with the German Emperours.

Well, the Absolution by this nicity being adiourned, and the Emperour well obseruing wherunto these pontifical policies tended, summoneth the Princes and Electors

*Cuspin.
Marinus.*

Electors to a Diet at *Rensium*. There with ease, by his affability, liberality and clemency, he so deuoteth their loyalties to his seruice, that by solemne oath they not onely auow to maintaine and defend the honor of the Empire: but they also decreed, the Procceses of *John* late Pope of *Rome*, returned against his Maiestie, to be void and of no validity: yea, that a Bishop ought not to entertaine any such practises against an Emperour, for that their iurisdctions were meerly of distinct natures.

Benedict dieth, & *Clement* the 6. succeedeth: an effeminate Prelat, extraordinarily ambitious of honor & potencie. Who had no sooner seated his foot in the chair of Lucifer, but his furious *Genius* took such hold of his hart, that in Latin & Dutch libels affixed vpon church dores, he summoneth his Maiestie vnder the censure of extream penāce, within three daies space to make satisfaction, to God & the church (meaning himself) as also to desist frō further meddling in the affaires of the Empire; which limitation being expired, & no appearance recorded, he proceedeth to sentence of cōtumacie. Afterwards, whē his Proctōrs craued forgiuenes, with an offer to performe all iniunctions to vtmost: he was not ashamed to motion so foule an attonement, as neuer Pagan demanded of his Captiue slaue: viz. *That hee should confesse and acknowledge all his errors and heresies: That he should resigne the Empire: and simply commit his children, and all his moueables into his tuition.*

*Cuspin. & Pa-
ralip. Dr. Sperg.*

Where is now become, O Lucifer, thy pastoral humility? where thy fatherly aspect? where thy representative Holinesse?

Notwithstanding, albeit the poorest refuse of the world would not haue accepted of these basest conditions,

tions, yet this good Emperour, fore-seeing, that if he should not bend; warre, slaughter & spoiles would ensue, he receiued the pontificall libell; signed it with his seale, and swore to obserue it; so farre forth humiliating his deiection, that vpon relation thereof, the whole Colledge of the scarlet-roabed-fathers could not chuse but receiue it with vnaccustomed admiratiō.

But the Emperor vpon sounder aduice, considering with himselfe, that without the consent of the Electors, and of the Princes & the estates of the Empire, it was against the fundamentall Law to accept of any such Capitulation, in the next assembly at *Frankford*, hee causeth the tenor of the reconciliation to be read before the whole Assembly. They giue sentence, that it tendeth in most points to the preiudice and destruction of the state, and therefore reiect it: They promise to stand fast vnto his Maiestie; in case, as before, he would re-assume his courage, and resolutely defend the honour of the Empire. And to conclude, they dispatch an Embassie to the Pope, with intimation, that from thence-forth he should cease from such friuolous conuentions, being purposely deuised to dishonour the Maiestie of the German Empire.

They arriue before his Holinesse; they expostulate the rigour of the Articles to the preiudice of the Empire: nothing else they inforce, nothing else they demand: But his Holinesse iraged like an illuded Tigresse; layeth all the blame vpon *Lewes*, & with deeper hart-burning then before, falleth into treatie with *Iohn* and *Charles* Kings of *Bohemia*, heretofore ouerthrowne by *Lewes*, and with their vncle *Baldwin*, Archbishop of *Treuers*, to destroy *Lewes* and his whole posterity.

The

The bargaine agreed vpon by these Pseudo Christians, in the yeare of our Sauour 1346. vpon Maundy-Thurday, hee is most irreligiously accursed by *Benedict*; and by the renouation of the Proceffe (sent out by his predecessour *Iohn*) declared an Heretique and scismaticque.

To aggravate the despight, and by effects to shew the solidity of his religion, hee commandeth the Electors within a proportioned time, to make choise of another. Loe, the Emperor rather then he will be an instrument of slaughter and faction, disgraceth his high calling by acceptance of basest articles; but the Pope rather then he will want of his will, *unico flatu* (as the proverbe is) will depose, set vp, commend, dispraise, blasse and curse; and without all respects, either of conscience or humanity, set all Christendome on outrage, to be reuenged on one creature. Were this the practise but of One, the imputation were excusable, as a defect in manners, but through the whole Legend of euery Emperours life, you shall obserue the one abstinent, yea timorous, for conscience sake to defile euen his imaginations with humane blood: the other rigorous, wrathfull, impatient, and quarrellsome: sometime vpon donatiues, sometime vpon *iura imperij*, and sometimes vpon non augmenting of Saint *Peters* patrimonie. Which irreligious and Antichristian outrages, albeit they know them in their consciences to be absolutely diabolicall, repugnant to Christian Doctrine, and pernicious to all ciuill society, yet rather then any Pope or Popeling will let fall any one particle of vnlawfull vsurpation, gained by any the wickedest of his predecessours, words and workes shall lie at random.

random vpon euery occasion, so that it would amaze a very Turke to heare with what shifts, with what euasions, and distinctions of *spiritualia*, they will stuffe whole volumes in iustifying of their falsifications, in wresting and curtailing of Authors, in denying manifest Records, in railing on their opposites, and pressing mens consciences with miracles, policies, and impostures. Insomuch, that if words will not worke, impostures shall seduce; if impostures prooue fruitlesse, swords shall walke, if swords be preuented, then poisons and treasonable practises shall put end to the controuersie. Blood must satiate, or the Church cannot be satisfied.

But to our History: The Electors haue a peremptory day giuen them, against which if they produce not their Anti-emperor, the Pope protesteth by no irreligious reliques, that rather then the Church shall want a Lieutenent, an Aduocate (Himselfe must bee Capitaine and chiefe Iustice) hee will set vp One of his sole Election. Well, oaths must be kept inuiolable, especially with traitors, and so doth his Holinesse. And thus he beginneth his web. *Henric of Wittenberg* Archbishop of *Mogunce*, and one of the electors, for his loiall adherency vnto his Lord and master, to curry fauour with the Bohemians, he depriueth of all his ecclesiasticall and temporall capacities, and into his place he intrudeth *Gerlace* his Chaplein, the Nephew of *Adolph of Nassaw*, once King of Romans. This new Papall Bishop in satisfaction of his Lord and masters expectation, and in requitall of like office towards the Bohemians for their choice and election, vpon the assembly of the Princes at *Rensium*, for the nomination of a new

Emperor,

Emperor, worketh with *Baldwin* of *Trenuers*, *Walram* of *Colein*, *Rodulph* Duke of *Saxonie*, and *Iohn* the father a Bohemian, to nominate and elect *Charles* King of *Bohemia* for supreme Lord of the Empire.

But for all this; albeit *Charles* in the life time of *Lewes* *Paralip. V. 16.* was crowned at *Bonna*, yet such was his reputation, and such the affection of all the good townes through the Empire towards his seruice, that vpon a conuocation of a Diet, and that after the coronation of *Charles*; No one of the Princes was found, either to second the election, or to regard the Popes Breues, or to swarue from their promised fidelity.

Had he beene a Popelike Prince; that is, If to worke his will, he would haue hazarded his Title vpon warre and bloodshed, what could hee not haue performed. But beeing of a quite contrary disposition, and guided by the best spirits of vnpartiall Prechers, he neuer began a warre against any man, though prouoked, but onely for the quiet and honour of his country; And in detestation of slaughter, resolved with himselfe neuer to determine a quarrel by warre, if any secundarie meanes might finish it by peace; and therefore betaking himselfe to his quietest dispositions, by the trechery of *Clement* (as some Authors report) he was poysoned at a meriment, and after as he rode on hunting, as soon as by labor and the motion of his beast his blood heated, hee fell headlong from horsebacke. Thus, most vnworthyly was this Emperor to the grieve of all good Christians made away, in the second yeere after the election of *Charles*, the fift of the Ides of October, in the yeere of Grace 1347. after hee had so honourably gouerned the Empire for the space of thirty and three

R

yeeres

yeeres, that those good spirits who all his life time had administred vnto him true and loyall seruice against al Papisticall malediction, now after his death with like constancy and honesty defended his neuer dying memory, against all *shemeis* posterity; as at this day it is apparantly seen, not only by record of history, but also by the particular letters of the Consul of *Basil*.

Par. ap. v. sp.
Naucl. gen. 45.

And thus it is: the Bishop of *Bamberg* (by vertue of a commission directed vnto him from *Anignion* by the Popes authority, to absolue as many as adhered vnto *Lewes*) the yeere following the death of *Lewes*, iournied with *Charles* towards *Basil*: At his ariuall he made a very perswasive speech to induce the Inhabitants, fithence they stood excommunicated in the behalfe of *Lewes* for assisting his party, with all humil提高 to demand absolution: vnto whome *Conradus* of *Bernsfield*, the Maior of the City, in the presence of *Charles*, and the rest of the nobility, as well secular as ecclesiasticall, made this resolute reply: *Lord of Bamberg, know, that we will neither confesse nor beleene, that our Soueraigne Lord Lewes, Emperor of Romans, was euer an Heretique: But howeuer, whomsoever the Electors shall impose vpon vs for our Master, him onely wee acknowledge, without asking leaue of the Pope.*

Surely as this Heroique speech of the Consul, shewed the Christianlike courage of the man, in attributing due obedience to his lawfull Soueraigne, and may to future ages be a testimony of innocency protested, and in meere loue and admiration of vertue: so without question this noble and worthy Emperour deserued no lesse, if the whole impartiall world were to returne a lury vpon the passage of his intire life:

being

being doubtlesse an honest man, vnspotted, studious of his countries freedome, and onely a seuerer opugner of the Romish tyranny: so far forth, that without exception, he is to be remembred with all those stiles of Honor, which are accustomed to be instiled vpon those, who for the loue of their countries, haue refused to vndergoe no difficult perills.

Charles the fourth.

He raigned in the yeere 1346. About the twentieth yeare of Edward the third.

LEWES being dead, *Charles* after he had by diuerse meanes appeased the competitors opposed against him by the electors of *Mogunce*, the *Palatine*, the *Saxon*, and the *Brandeburgen*, is at last vpon promise that he should procure absolution for the free Cities (yet standing excommunicated for their adherence vnto *Lewes*) crowned Emperour, and on his iourney towards *Italie*; but there entertained with more disgrace, then any of his predecessors. For as on foot he entred the City, Behold (quoth a certaine Senator) in his Oration before the people in the Capitol) *thy King commeth towards thee in great humility*; very bitterly taunting him with scoffes and reuilements. Insomuch that the Cardinall of *Hostia*, sent from *Anignion* by *Innocent* the sixt, would not condiscend to Crowne him, before he had giuen security to

R 2

remaine

remaine in *Rome* nor in *Italy*, no longer then the businesse imported.

How base and ignominious this limitation was to the Honour of the Empire, is apparantly to be discerned by the Epistles of *Francis Petrarch*, (that most learned and eloquent Poet) written vnto *Charles* himselfe in these wordes. *I knowe not what this promise made and sworne to the Romane Bishop meaneth, as if your Maiesties entrance into the Citie, had beene gaine-said by some inexpugnable trench, or impassable mountaine: what manner of pride is this, that the Romane Prince, the life and fountaine of liberty, should himselfe be deprived of liberty; so farre forth, that he who ought to be Lord of all, can not be said to be Lord of himselfe?*

And in another place, *Nerio of Friuli*, in his writings, doth not much dissent. *All superiority is impatient of corruialty: whereof, if antiquity can not giue vs presidents, I feare that late examples will make the case frequent. For now (as fame goeth) the Pope of Rome hath forbidden the Romane Prince, Rome: whom hee not onely suffereth, but also commandeth, to be contented with the diadem, and sole title of the Romane Empire. Him, whom he suffereth to be Emperaur, at no hand will he suffer to enioy Emperie.*

As the cowardize of *Charles*, in disseimbling his greeuances against this propagating pride of the prelacie, is with iust cause to be complained of. No lesse are the Popes worthy of eternall reprehension, who for their proper respects in deposing of good & godly Emperors, substituted in their places such Ministers whose mindes they knew were alwaies prepared to satisfie their behests by warre and bloud-shed, most wickedly

kedly & feloniously imposing vpon the Empire those losses and disgraces, wherewith at this day wee see it weakened and generally taxed.

For surely this *Charles*, to inable his proiects to appease his Competitors; to dispose of the reuenues of the Crowne at his pleasure; and freely to bestow them where he thought good, gaue vnto *Gunther Earle of Swatzburg*, a valiant and warlike Leader, and by the Electors saluted for Emperor 22. thousand markes of siluer; with two Imperiall Cities in *Thuringe* for the terme of his life. *Cuspin. in vita Guntheri.*

Vnto *Frederick Marques of Misnia*, cleccted in stead of *Schwatzburge* deceased, he gaue ten thousand marks, to resigne his nomination; and then prepared for his journey towards *Rome*. *Idem in vita Caroli.*

From whence escaping, by an excuse of going on hunting, in as dishonorable a manner, as neuer any of his predecessors before, hee returned to *Millan*, and there created the *Visconti* (a Potent family in that Citie) in receipt of a wonderfull masse of mony, perpetuall Vicars of the Empire throughout *Lambardy*, to the euermore lasting dishonor and preiudice of *Germanie*. *Auont. li. 7.*

For a sumptuous banquet in *Ville-noue* neere *Auignon*, hee re-delivered to the King of *France*, the Kingdome of *Arles*, acquired to the Empire by *Otho* the first.

From *Gerlace*, Archbishop of *Mogunce*, though by his partiality hee gained his election, hee wrested the priuiledge of inaugurating the Kings of *Bohemia*, in right belonging to the Church of *Mogunce*, and by confirmation of *Clement* the sixt, inuested it in the Archbishop of *Prage*. *Theodor. de Nyem.*

Zeigl. de viris
illustribus Ger-
mania. ca. 91.

Kyant. li. 1. c. 3.
Tritemius in
Cron. Hirfang.

He ordained by law, that none but *Bohemians* should be admitted into the Colledge of the Canons regular of *Ingleham*, being of the Dioces of *Mogunce*. And presently after to make quick and profitable returnes of the profits of the Empire, hee retailed vnto the adioyning Princes sixteene free Cities of *Swenia*, all held of the Crowne. To *Cunon* Archbishop of *Treuers*, he pawned *Bopardia* and *Wesel* (Imperiall Cities) by statute.

Aeneas Silvius
ca. 3. hist. Bo-
hemic.

De his & alijs
quam plurimis
prolixè vide
Theod. de Nyem
in nemore suo
iam edito. c. 71.

Lusatia, which time out of minde, had beene held in fee of the Imperiall diademe by the Archbishops of *Magdeburg*, by the corruption of the then Incumbent, he perpetuated vnto the kingdome of *Bohemia*.

Against the fundamentall Lawes of the Country, and the custome of Antiquity, by nouell and subordinate practise, he offered euery Elector (a part) one hundred thousand Duckets to nominate for his successor, his sonne *Wincelaw*, a man giuen ouer to idlenesse, cowardize, luxurie, all wantonneffe and belly-cheere. For which, when this *Phocas* had not wherewith to keepe his dayes of payment, he morgaged for one hundred thousand duckets, to some their Imposts, and to the *Palatine* (as memory recordeth) *Cesarea Luthrea*, *Oppenham*, *Odenham*, and *Ingelham*. Whereupon I may be bold to say, that by these diminutions, alienations, and mortgages, the Honourable entrados of the Crowne were so immeasurably wasted, that from that day to this, it hath not beene of power to recouer or restore this terrible downfall. For by the sale of these Imposts (the true and essentiall Patrimonie of the Crowne) the glorious Eagle hath beene so deploymed, that euer since thee hath beene but a scorne and con-

Zeigl. de viris
illustribus Ger-
ca. 83.

temptible to euery other liuing creatures. Which being true (as true it is) what Patriot can but accurse the Romane Bishops, as the sole and prime authors of all these mischiefes, the children of desolation, and the perpetuall disturbers of all Christian welfare?

Wenceflaus the Coward.

He reigned Anno Christi. 1379. about the second yeare of Richard the second.



After the demise of *Charles*, *Wenceflaus* his sonne, during the schisme betwixt *Urban* the sixt, and *Clement* the seventh (then the which a more fatall, bestial, durable dissention neuer befell the Church) gouerned the Empire, and tooke part with *Urban*. To *Clement* vpon occasion he sendeth his Embassadors, and amongst them are remembred certaine honest and indifferent Prelates to haue passed, whom by exquisite tortures he slew most barbarously. And as for *Urban*, for that the covetous King had deceiued the more covetous Romanes, gaping after the treasure raised vpon ecclesiasticall benefices, in not keeping promise with his personall presence, after hee had granted his commission for leuying the saide ecclesiasticall tribute through the whole Empire, towards the defrayment of his charges for his Romane-iourney, he became vtterly alienated from his auncient friendship. But what Death preuented by the death of *Urban* his successor,

Naue. gen. 47.


Boniface

Boniface the ninth being sure to haue had it, if God had giuen life, made good in highest measure. For he approouing the censure of deiection against *Wenceslaus*, not so much for his euil and degenerate life, as for that he had beguiled the Romans of their pence, ratified and aduanced the Election of *Rupert Earle Palatine*, preferred vnto the Empire by the Bishops of *Mogunce, Cölen,* and *Treuers*.

*Theod. de Ny-
em. li. 2. ca. 14.*

Rupertus Caesar.

He rained. 1400.

 *S Boniface* the ninth, in despite of *Wenceslaus*, with great facility and readinesse approued his deposition: so *Rupert* but now aloft in highest fauour of the Pope, at this present is so counterchecked by this wether-cocke, *Alexander* the fifth, the third from *Boniface* (a most malicious Cretulian) that he is very likely to feeble the smart of as violent a diuision in the state, as doth the Church in a present and terrible schisme.

*Theod. de Ny-
em. li. 3. ca. 53.*

For vpon his very installment at *Pisa* in the *Fishers chaire* without any regard either of *Ruperts* right, or his present possessiō vpon a iust title, he nominateth by his missiues for King of Romanes, *Wenceslaus*, the man, whom in a frequent assembly, with one consent the Electors had heretofore remooued from imperiall gouernement.


Which Indignity *Rupert* not being able to digest, hee made his grieuous complaints thereof vnto the
Lords

Lords of the state; and exceedingly interrupted the obedience of the Church throughout the Empire. And without doubt, he had attempted far greater re-formations, had not the sparkles of the se smoking substances together with the Prelate, to the general good of Christendom been at one extincted by the Physick of *Marsilius* a physitian of *Parma*.

And *Rupert* applying his labours to redresse what had been amisse by the auarice of *Charles*, and the cowardize of *Wenceslaus*, in the tenth yeere of his raigne departed this world. In whose place succeeded *Sigismund*, a Prince for his wisdom, learning and integrity, most renowned.

Sigismund.

*He rained 1411. About the twelfth yeere of
Henry the fourth.*

 *SIGISMUND* at his entrance vpon the Imperiall Diadem, finding the Roman Sea miserably distracted by the wicked schisme of three Antipopes (*John* the foure and twentieth at *Bononia*, *Gregory* the twelfth at *Ariminum*, and *Benedict* the 12. in *Spaine*) tooke such infinit paines to restore it vnto its pristinate beauty, as few or none of the auncient kings or Emperors euer vnder-took the like, for the welfare of the Church. For albeit of his owne authoritie diuested vpon himselfe, and diuolued from his Ancestors, he might, & ought to haue cast out these boue-feaus of diuision; yet made

*Nacl. gen. 48.
Parap. vrsf.
Cuspinian.*

S he

he choice in modesty and trueneſſe of Chriſtian piety, rather to redreſſe theſe euils by a Generall Councel, then by the violent meanes of war and blood-ſhed. Which to effect, to his extreame trauaile, danger and expences, he viſited almoſt all the realmes of Chriſtendom, *France, Spaine, and England*, and there by his godlineſſe and good counſell ſo wrought with the Princes of thoſe kingdomes, that they commended his zeale, allowed his courſe, and promiſed their beſt aſſiſtance.

*Platin. in vita
Martin quinti,
preter alios.*

This done, he tooke his iourney towards *Italy*, and dealt with *John* at *Mantua*, to come vnto the Councel at *Conſtance*. The Aſſembly being ſet, ſuch were his feeling perſwaſiues, ſuch his important motiues, as the three Antipopes being condemned to depoiſition, hee cauſed *Otho* of *Colonna*, a Roman patrician, by the name of *Martin* the ſiſt, to be preferred to the place by the generall ſuffrage of all the nations there aſſembled. Yea, and to remoue all impediments from retardation of the peace, he ſuffered *John Huſſe* and *Ierome* of *Prage*, men of exquiſit learning and ſingular piety, to be condemned and burned, againſt an oath of ſafe-conducte publiquely allowed them.

But now, let vs go by examination to learne what thanks this godly, zealous, honourable and Chriſtian Emperour receiued at the hands of this Holy-ſeeming Sea, for theſe their ſo infinite benefits. Vpon which I will not ſtand to exemplifie, for that euery weake braine can conceiue, what are the bleſſings of peace, what the fruites of a quieted conſcience, what the rewardes of vnity in religion. But ſurely their retributions were ſuch, as would abſolutely diſhearten any
wile

wiſe man, to inable ſuch ingratefull Canonists by benefits. Yet will wee take ſo much paine, as to decipher them to our Reader.

No long time after (*Eugenius* the fourth, then Popeing it in *Venice*) the Emperour tooke occaſion to go into *Italie* to receiue his Inauguration: where by the way it happened that he countenanced ſomewhat aboue ordinary, *Philip* Duke of *Millan*, at that inſtant warring againſt the Venetians and Florentines. They partly fearing, and partly imagining, that their wills were halfe obtayned, if they might worke the Pope to their faſhion, aduentured, and without oppoſall gained his Fatherhoods good will, to deny the Emperour his lawfull requelt; and more, adioyned his forces, to make good the paſſage of *Arno* about *Syenna* againſt his Maieſties people. This, you muſt at any hand remember, was the Popes requittall, this their vſuall remunerations, nor vnfitly beſeeming their double dealing conſciences.

Yet departed his Maieſty not vncrowned, but obſerue I beſeech you, by what practiſes, by what cunning ſleights they proceeded in their ſtate-Houſe. Extraordinary Interceſſion muſt be made; Six months he muſt ſtay at *Siena*, to his infinit expence; who gained by that? And at laſt, muſt he leaue *Rome*, doubt you not, but to *Eugenius* his high content.

And againe, this *Neronian* bloud-thirſting Biſhop, ſom ſhort time after being depoeſed, for going about to frustrate the decree of the Councel of *Conſtance* (whereby it was inacted, that euery ſeuenth yeare the Biſhops ſhould celebrate a Generall Councell) and to ratifie That of *Baſil*, which *Martin* had ſummoned, and
S 2 him-

Vimbelina-
gis in Epit. ve-
rum Germani-
carum.

Nauc. gen. 49.

himselfe authorized; in the daies of *Frederick* the third, he set all *Austria*, on a miserable, woful & lamettable combustion, by prouoking *Lewes* the sonne of *Charles* king of *France*, then called the *Daulphin*, to infest *Germany* with warre, fire, & famine. For this Prince, at the pleasure of *Eugenius*, endeuoring to make void the Councel of *Basil*, with his *Armenachs* and souldiers, by cunning, treason, & protestations, possessed himselfe of all the plaine Country, yea, and of some Cities of *Alsatia*, miserably wasting that goodly Prouince, the most fertile mother of grain & wine. That done, he fell to burning the villages, the Mannors & Mansions of citizens, of orphans and widowes, and therein spared neither Gods Churches nor Monasteries. Having put period to wast, but not to cruelty, he returned to *Basil* with 30. thousand Combatants, where by the valiancy of three thousand *Heluetians*, charging for their Country, hee was finally slaine, the third part of his lame & maymed Army, scant returning with life into *France*. Such be the successe of all papal entertainment.

Frederick the third.

Hee raigned Anno 1440. about the eighteenth yeare of *Henry* the sixth.



Lbert succeeded *Sigismund*; but hee departing this world within two yeares after his election, the Imperiall diaceme diuolued vpon *Frederick* of *Austria*, who be-
ing.

ing by nature a Prince of a clement, milde & peaceable disposition, set diligent watch and warde ouer his thoughts, his words, and his actions, not at all to offend these hereditarie disturbers of peace, and perpetuall manaclers of Princes. Yet could hee not fully auoid their crossings, abate their pride, nor escape their plots.

For as in a publique Parliament held at *Mogunce*, he did what he could to corroborat the councell of *Basil*, held in the yeare of our Lord 1441. which the Pope laboured tooth and naile to disanul; as also, to diminish the exactions which by Popish iniunctions were leui- ed vpon the *German* Churches; which to effect, by his letters, hee desired the king of *France* either to assist in person, or by some eminent persons of his Kingdome: So the Pope, to countermine against this lawfull battery of publique triall (for these can no more abide it; then Owles can light) tampereth with the *French*, neither to goe himselfe, nor to suffer any other (without his priuity) to appeare as his *Deputie*. Here behold one Popish trick more for the present to frustrate the intended reformation of a noble & vertuous Empe-
rour. And heereupon followed that wofull *Alsati-*
an de-population, whereof wee tolde you but now; There is an other trick plotted, to busie his head with-all, viz. Diuersion. His owne house is on fire, how can hee then attend the quenching of his neighbours?

And albeit, that hee outliued three successiue Bishops, & during their liues, caried himself so modestly and benignly towards them, that nothing was attempted by them against his Dignity; & yet hoped for greater

Epist. extat. in fine
ne clemangis
in fasciculo re-
rum repetun-
darum ante ali-
quot annos Co-
lonie impressa.

Work layd out
on another
frontier by the
Court of Rome,
when reforma-
tion is spoken of.

ter contentments by the rising of *Pius* the second to the Papacie, his auncient seruant and Minister: Notwithstanding, this his trusty friend being once seated, without acquainting the Emperour, made no scruple to accurse his kinsman, *Sigismund Archduke of Austria*, and to entangle *Germanie* with intestine diuisions. As thus.

Sigismund, after long controuersying, and nothing preuailing, being vnwilling that the people vnder his tuition, should still stand exposed to the deprædations of the *Romanists*, in a bickering of Horse-men, chanced to take prisoner, and imprisoned, *Nicholas Cusarius*, by the Pope sent into *Tirol*, to ransack the Bishoprick of *Brixia*: The Bishop censuring him at no lesse a crime then high treason, committed against one of his creatures, enioyneth him greuous punishments, from which his trustinesse could not be wooed to absolue him, no not at the intercession of *Cesar*, vntill *Pluto* himselfe came a messenger to release him from his papall obstinacie.

His owne *Creatures* report, that neither the threats, nor the intreaties of Princes or communalities could any whit terrifie him, but in extreame and insatiable prowling for mony, he was ready to accurse and prosecute with warre, as many as any way offered to gainsay his intendments.

Vide Paralip.
Dist. Minister.
in Cosmog.
Nauch. in ult.
gen.

Theodorick Erbach, Archbishop of *Mogunce* being dead, *Diether Ernsburg* was preferred to his place. This man, for that Annats and first fruites had beene abolished and condemned in the Councel of *Basil*, refused to pay to Saint *Peter* for bestowing the Pall vpon him, those twenty thousand, fixe hundred and fifty duckets

of

of the Rhene, which his Holinesse by prescription ad- iudged to be due vnto him. *Pius* was not a little moued at the refusall; denieth him confirmation, and bestowed the Incumbencie vpon *Adolph of Nassau* (not for loue towards the one belieue it, nor for especiall desert in the other) but for that hee was honourably allied, and able by friends to become master of the possession. Note.

Diether valiantly resisteth his Deiection, & amongst many others, by large and bountifull entertainment draweth *Henry* the Palatine, and *Frederick* of *Bamberg*, to take part in his quarrell: All *Germanie* is vp in faction, and the principall personages therein ingaged, to their notable losse and consumption. For, *Charles* Marques of *Baden*, *George* Bishop of *Metzen*, & *Ulrich* Earle of *Wittemberg*, of the faction of *Adolph*, in a notable encounter neere *Sechenham*, are rowted, flaine, captiuated, and imprisoned in the Castle of *Heydelberge*. From whence they could not be deliuered, before that *Baden* had payed one hundred thousand Florins; *Metzen* forty five thousand, and *Wittemberg* as many, as the Marques. And for further gratuity, they were faine either to add, or to release to the Palatine, other royalties of equall value vnto their ransomes.

At this misfortune of his friends, who maketh any doubt, but that *Pius* was exceedingly agreed vpon, as the brused viper, hee addresseth his querimonious letters vnto *Philip* Duke of *Burgundy*, concerning the miserable estate of his partakers; a Prince as truly wise, as valiant in armes. Him hee nominateth *Captaine* of the Warre, and intreateth his assistance against the Palatine, *Diether*, the Earle of *Catsenelboge*, and

Note againe.

and their adherents. But *Philip* in his high wisdom, either misliking the burthē of this war, or by the temporizing awkwardnes of the Pope too-long deferring his resolute; meane while, by the treason of two Citizens, *Mogunce* was surpris'd by *Scaludo* in the night & by *Lodovic. Niger Palatin*, the Earle of *Vold*, and other of their complices in the behalfe of *Adolph*. Who put it to sack, and fire; slew five hundred of the Citizens, and reduced it into perpetuall seruitude. So that this noble Diocesse, what by the sales, the alienations, and the mortgages, of the dorps, villages and burroughs, euen to this very day feeleth, and smarteth for the outrages of this papall warre.

This was one of *Pius* his good deeds; Rather then his auaricious *Cosers* would forbear to in-exhaust *Germanie* of her treasure, hee cared not into what distresses he cast the Princes, the people, and the Cities of the kingdom.

But as this second *Impius* dealt with the Princes; So did his successor, a Venetian, *Paulus* the second (and worse) with his Maiesty. For after the taking of *Constantinople*, *Frederick* made his second iourney to *Rome*, on purpose to deliberate with *Paul* about an expedition against the Turks, To the accelerating wherof, for that the Princes through their mutuall discontents were much deiected in courage, he praised his Holinesse in person to beare him company into *Germanie*. But the Bishop putting off the motion with Courtship and kind protestations, notwithstanding laid wait for his life. Which he by his prouidence declining, and in future resolving, to take precise notice of Popish trecheries, first courageously opposed in the Parliament at

Noremberg

*Hubertus Golt.
& Hutemus.*

Noremberg against the Legats of *Innocent*, deputed through *Germany* to collect his Holinesses dismes, but dispatched them away againe to *Rome* as penilesse, as from thence they departed.

What man liueth so void of proficiency, that reading these Legends, will hereafter beleue this traitorous society; whence such worthy Emperours, such wise Princes, and such great Potentates, could neither by their owne prouidences, nor the prudencie of their counsels, prescribe themselues an assured meanes, to be fully acquitted from their ouer-reaching inuentions?

Maximilian the first.

Hee raigned 1494. About the ninth yeere of
Henry the seuenth.



After the decease of *Frederick*, *Maximilian* being by the generall suffrage of the Electors in the life time of his Father chosen for his Consort in the Empire, was now acknowledged for Emperor.

Who although with ease hee might haue purchased the accustomed solemnities of *Cesar*, yet beeing a Prince most deeply in-scene into worldly practises; without question, vpon recordation of such inconueniences, which hee obserued formerlie to haue fallen vpon the preceding Emperours, (allured vnto *Rome*, by the glittering reflex of a golden Crowne) hee set himselfe downe, and quoted it in his Tables;

T

Naucl. gen. 49.
Mutius li. 29.
Cuspinian in
vita Maximil.
& Zelemi
Othomanni.

bles; That the presence of the Popes were euer to bee auoided, an infallible presage of ensuing aduersity to the Roman Emperors. Notwithstanding his warieft sinceritie could not at all times auoide their wickedest counsages.

For in the very infancie of his installement, that most luxurious and couetous Tyrant Alexander the sixt, for mony, to the eternall reproch of the Christian name, sold *Zezimus* heire of Turkey, expelled by his brother *Baiazet*, aliue and dead within the space of one day. In like thirst of treasure, receiued from the French, he ratified the Rape of *Anne* of Brittain, before espoused by *Proxie* vnto *Maximilian*. The solemnized and consummated mariage of the daughter of the said Emperor with *Charles* of France, he dissolued against the will, intreaty, and reall commandement of *Cesar* her father.

By Cardinall *Raymond* he pillaged the chiefest Provinces of *Germany* with nouell and vheard off deuises of exaction.

Mut. li. 3.

By that irregular and incomprehensible power of the keies, for many yeeres to come he gaue pardons to all rich-soules departed.

After him, as second in name, so second in Papacie, *Iulio* circumuented this Emperor with as fine fetches, as did any of his predecessors the former *Cesars*.

Hubertus
Goltz.
Paral. 1. 1. p.

For after he had ingaged his maiesty in the warre of *Venice*, a warre of all other the most dangerous & troublefom, and that he had forced the best of their Cities to the pinch of necessity: *Iulius* against his faith, most religiously sworne before the states of the Empire at *Augusta*; and against common honesty, not only recei-

ued

ued the Venetians, vpon request of peace, into fauour, but entring with them into League, this most wicked *Senacherib* turned his armes against his Maiesty. Yelling out a speech rather shewing euident testimony of an Out-lawes humour, then of *Peters* successor.

For by records of memory it is certainly reported, that as he passed from the City by the bridge of *Tiber*, he threw the keies into the Riuer, exclaiming in fury: *Sithence Peters keies will no longer stead vs, welcome Pauls sword*. Whereby, if a man would fall to iest, he might well argue, that by this mad tricke he depriued himselfe and his successors of this Clauian Tyranny, claimed from *S. Peter*, and now transferred to *Saint Tiber*.

Vpon which translation of *Iulius* his keies, one hath plaied no lesse truly, then wittely in these verses.

He that for many Ages long hath sate
In Peters chaire, new doctrine doth inuent,
For sinfull Soules he prays not: but at that,
Which peacefull Peter him to follow ment,
He iests: Loues armes and bloody streames of warre,
Paul is his Saint, Peter inferiour farre.
Paul hath a sword, but smites not: He not so,
For many foules haue died with his blow.
A cruell Out-law sprung from poyso'nd wombe,
And neither followes Christ, nor Peters doome.

But our great and eternall God, the iust reuenger of iniquity, suffered not this his neuer-before-heard-of periury to die vnreunged.

Hubert. Goltz.
Mutius lib. 3.
Paralip. 1. 1. p.

For at what time *Lewes* king of France, according to the Conuentions of the League with *Cesar*, persecuted his Holinesse, so far ouergone in pride through the assistance of the Venetians, as hee doubted not to

T 2

scorne

scorne all conditions of peace; yet after the battell of *Rauenna*, such was the disastrous fortune of him and his, that the peace, which but euen now, hee scorned, now hee humbly seeketh, to his cost experimenting that for all his iesting, *Peters* keyes at a pinch did him more seruice, then many thousands of *Pauls* swords.

After this ouerthrow, and some other crosses, hee died, and left *Leo* the tenth, his successour, as well in feat as in trecherous disposition. For in the beginning of his pontificie, estranging himselfe from the *French* King, he adhered to *Cesar & Sforza* the *Milla-nois*, against the *French*, then in March vpon an inuasion against *Millan*.

*Arnoldus Fe-
ronius in vita
Francisci Va-
lesij.*

Vpon the slaughter of the *Heluetians* at *Marignan*, *Frederick* and *Sforza* being reduced into order, he violated his league with *Maximilian*, and returned againe to the friendship of *Francis*. Vnto whom, after he had obtained a Graunt, that the pragmaticall Sanction should be abolished in *France*, and a new inserted, hee conferred the titles of the *Constantinopolitan* Empire.

In this donation, whether should a Christian more admire his preposterous liberality, in giuing away an other mans right, or abhorre his trecherie in doing his vtmost, to crosse *Maximilian*, so well-deseruing an Emperor?

*Catal. testium
veritatis.*

But *Cesar* finding himselfe deceiued (whether in this confrontment, or in some other, I am not able to say) is reported to haue said in Dutch: *That hee could well auow, that none of the Popes had kept faith with him: And that Leo should be the last of that ranke, vnto whom hee would giue credit. And that hee said so, and did so,*

the sequel proued. For within a few yeares after falling into a laske, he yeelded vp his ghost, in the yeare of Saluation 1519. By whom, by the pleasure of almighty God, it might haue come to passe, that hee, who had beene so often illuded by Popish practises, might haue taken some course in so great an alteration and blessed reformation of religion, to haue begun primitiue restauration to their finall destruction. But being preuented by immature death, what was in his minde, he bequeathed to be executed, by the potencie of his liuing successor *Charles*, his brothers sonne.

Charles the fift.

He raigned Anno 1519. about the eleventh yeare of Henry the eighth.

BVt what *Penne*, as it ought, in fitting ornament, is able to delineat to life, the treacheries which from time to time these *Patrons of confusion* bounded out against this *Charles*, this potent and thrice honorable Emperour? In so wonderfull an alteration of religion, such as since the corruption of the Primitiue, neuer befell the Christian world, who can but wonder at the daring presumption of the Popes, in prouoking so happy and so worthy a Potentate? who, taking into notice his singular affection in defending and vpholding the Papacie, can chuse but accurse the ingratitude of such desperat persons?

*Joſius li. 4.
de vita Leonis
decimi.
The Pope is
now French.*

For vpon the deceaſe of *Maximilian*, the Electors being aſſembled at *Frankfort*, *Charles* and *Francis* king of *France*, became competitors for the diademe. *Leo* the tenth, being in bonds of ſtrict friendſhip with *Franks*; and according to the innated humours of the Church, hauing receiued his ſee, fauoured and pleaded his beſt plea in barre of *Charles*, to the preferment of his bountifull client *Francis*.

His cautions conſiſted of three principles; the firſt imported a conſideratiue feare of his Greatnes, being by inheritance a Prince indowed with many ſpacious and wealthy Kingdomes. The ſecond, was taken from his peculiar and figure-caſting imagination; In that, forſooth, this *Charles* by no obſcure and lineamentall predictions of *face* and *diſpoſition*, ſhould reſemble the man, fore-told in certaine verſes of an auncient Prophet; *Who ariſing in the North*, ſhould be the motiue of greuous alterations to fall vpon all *Italy*, but eſpecially vpon the *Romiſh ſea*: The third from pretence of equity, by letters ſignified vnto the Lords of the Election; *That it ſtoode not with Law for Charles to aſpire vnto the Empire; for that the Kings of Naples were the Churches Liege-men, and time out of minde by oath had capitulated with the Biſhops, neuer to aſſeſt the Romane Empire, but to reſt contented with their inheritances.*

*Appendix ad
Plati. Steid. ubi
ſupra.*

Now Imperial.

But by the integrity of *Frederick* Duke of *Saxonie*, in manifeſtation of his loyalty towards *Maximilian* his deceaſed Maſter, vnto whom all his life time hee ſtood moſt deuoted; *Charles* preuailed. *Leo* now turning *Vulpes*, followes the ſtreame; for the preſent, cleanly falleth off from the *French*: And finding Grace to attend *Charles*; there courts he; and thether hee diſpatcheth

theth his Commendatorie miſeries.

Charles requireth his *Amen* to the Election; as alſo his diſpenſation, to retaine with the Empire the Kingdome of *Naples*, the Law of Inueſtiture in no point gaine-ſaying it. But giue a Pope leaue, I pray you, to fly to his wits, he muſt, and doth plot out new deuifes, to impeach the Greatnes of *Charles*. Hee ſendeth his Breues and meſſengers throughout *Germanie*, to forbid the Diët at *Wormes*: of purpoſe to put off his Coronation at *Aquiſgran*. But when his pontifical improbity perceiued his poſitiue diuerſions to be illuded; and the reſolution of the Electors to be ſuch, as could not be daunted in their proceedings by force, feare, flattery, nor threats, hee then fell againe, to the renewing of his league, with the late-forſaken *French*: Amongſt other Articles inſerting this for one; That, *both the Sicils ſhould be taken from Charles; That the gouernment of Italie ſhould be altered, and the protection of the Cities ſhared, betweene the French and his Holines.*

*Reſp. Caſaris
ad breue Apo-
ſtolicum.*

Againſt French.

Now the queſtion is, for how long time this Combination ſtood immutable: ſo long doubt you not, as it ſtood with the welfare of *Leo*, and the aduantage of his ſea. And this is an eſpecial note, to be alwaies obſerued through the whole diſcourſe of theſe liues.

For, as ſoone as the *French* King, vpon confidence of this Popiſh League, had broken with *Caſar*, & ſent *Robert de la March*, *Charles* his rebel, to infeſt *Netherland*; yea, and his men of warre into *Italy*, to aſſay the ſurpriſe of *Rhegium*, a towne late belonging to the Church; *Leo* fearing the potencie of the *French*, and calling their fidelities into ſuſpect: to make ſure work for the maintenance of his owne ſtake, and to reduce
are-

And lastly
Imperiall.

a restitution to the Church of those townes which the French had vsurped; Now againe the third time hee followeth the Fortunes of *Cesar*: Desiring of his Maieſty (after his most courteous reception) that *Parma* & *Placentia* might be restored to the Church; *Francis Sforza* to the Dutchy of *Millan*; the French expelled *Italy*, and the Papacy being ſetled in a peaceable eſtate, might thenceforth be ſecured from all feare of the French.

Gerardus Mo-
ringus in vita
Hadriani vi.
Iouius in vita
euſdem.

But *Paul* dying; By the ſucceſſion of *Adrian* the ſixt, a Germane borne, the Papall Anger for a while lay ſilenced. For during the ſhort time of his Papacy, As a good ſchoolemaſter, hee perſiſted conſtant in good will towards *Cesar*; And againſt the French, he aſſiſted him with treaſure, and conioyned him in league with the Florentines, the Siennois, the Luquois, the Roytlets of *Italy*, the Apoſtolique ſea, with *Henry* of *England*, and *Lewes* of *Hungary*.

But *Adrian* in the ſecond yeere of his Papacy being departed, not without ſuſpicion of poyſon, the fatall practiſes of the Biſhops by ſo much the more eagerneſſe outflamed, by how much they had gathered materials to worke vpon, during the time of the former reſpiration.

Feronius in vita
regis Francisſci.

For *Iulius* of *Medices*, otherwiſe *Clement* the ſeuenth, after much wrangling, being elected Pope, before his installation was, no man more, eſteemed of *Cesar*. From the Church of *Toledo*, by his bounty he receiued an annuity of ten thouſand ducats. He reconciled him ſo thoroughly into the fauour of *Adrian*, from whence he was fallen, that in all affaires of importance, *Adrian* made him only of his counſell. But no ſooner Pope,

Reſp. *Cesaris* ad
breue Apoſto-
licum.

no

no ſooner traitor. Againſt his Lord hee complotteth league vpon league, diſcharging his bills of account with acquittances of this nature.

For *Francis* the French king being in *Italy*, and after the taking of *Millan* diſperſing his forces throughout *Lombardy*, *Clement* worketh the diſ-union of the *Hadrian* confederacy, and forbiddeth the Florentins, the Syennois and the Luccois to pay the money, which by the conuention they ought to haue ſent vnto *Cesar*.

By *Albert Pius* Prince of *Carpi*, he concluded a Clandeſtine league with king *Francis*, meane time cunningly treating with the Imperialiſts by way of ſequeſtration and Indifferency to impledge the territory of *Millan* into his diſcretion.

But the deuſe being vtterly diſliked, and fortune againſt all imagination ſo croſſing his deſignements, that in a memorable defeature, *Francis* was taken priſoner at *Parue*, and carried captiue into *Spaine*; then to his perpetuall reproch of leuity and inconfſtancy (to flater with *Cesar*) he parted with an infinit maſſe of money for his ſouldiers arreages: yet during theſe paſſages in iealouzy, that *Charles* would turne his thoughts to the conqueſt of *Millan*, which of all his Italian pretenciſes was only left vnconquered, he goeth to counſel with *Loyſe* the Queen mother, *Henry* king of *England*, the Venetians and ſome other Potentates, how to expulſe the Imperialiſts out of *Italie*, and redeeme *Francis*. To ſet forward the execution whereof, he dealeth with *Ferdinand Danila*, a man of eminent place & ſouldiery in *Cesar's* Campe: aſſaieth to draw him to the party, and for a bait offereth him the title of the kingdom of *Naples*. *Danila* being of a ſubtrill & cloſe diſpoſition,

As *Leo*: So *Iu-
lius*.
As *Leo* and *Iu-
lius*, ſo the reſi-
due: viz. we-
thercocke, for
aduantage.
Sleyd. li. 4.

Feronius in vita
Franciſci.
Iouius li. 7. in
vita F. *Dauila*.

V

accepteth

accepteth, learneth the secrets of the enemies projects, and acquainteth his master therewith. *Cesar* laugheth at the mans periury; who being the principall architect of all iniurious & preiudiciall proceedings against him, had notwithstanding himselfe made his enemy priuy to counsels, giuen him very serious cautions in future, how to proceede in his affaires., and how to prouide for his owne security, with an intimation to become carefull to bind the loyalties of his men of warre with greater deuotion to his seruice.

Wherby finding himselfe ouer-reacht by *Dauila*, he giueth not ouer, but trieth another way to the wood: And thus it was: *Francis* being set at liberty by *Cesar*, and vnwilling to make good these conuentions, wherunto by the treaty of *Madril* he stood obliged; he takes hold of the occasion, absolueth him of his oath; confederateth anew with the French and some others, and proclaimeth the confederacy by the name of the *Most holy League*. Inserting amongst the Articles, that *Cesar* also might be cōprehended therein, So that, he would first re-deliver vpon a competent ransom the children of *France*, as yet in hostage for their father: restore *Milan* to *Sforza*, and enter *Italie* for his Coronation with no greater troops, then should seeme requisite to the discretions of the Pope and the Venetians.

What indifferent Reader, weighing the originall of this league, the time wherein it was concluded: and the occasions wherupon it was broched, can make any other construction to his vprightest censure, but that his Holiness had small intention by these iniurious breaches of concluded articles, to further the publique peace, but rather to administer matter of implacable
hate

heart-burnings and assured wars between the Princes. For by one Apostaticall Breue, first, the conditions of the peace are prescribed to so high and mighty an Emperor, by his subiect and Vassall *Sforza* of *Milan*: secondly, the oath of the French King duely and solemnly taken, is pardoned and frustrated: thirdly *Cesar* is commanded to re-deliver the children of *France*, as if it were not enough by the releasement of the fathers oath, to be once deluded. Fourthly, He is commanded, not to winke at, but to perpetuate the tyranny of the Italian Kinglings. Fifthly, he is commanded to forbear to come vnto *Italy*, vnlesse he proportioned his troops to the shape of the *Papal and Venetian limitations*. Sixthly, He is commanded to giue pardon to Traitors: and for conclusion, in case of not-performance, warre is denounced by sea and by land.

Amidst which dishonorable limitations, what could *Cesar* doe, but in true acknowledgement of the vprightnes of his cause, reiect these base conditions with as great courage on the one side, as they were insolently propounded by the other, reposing more hope in his innocency, then in the multitude of Horse or shipping?

And surely, God almighty, the vnpartiall Iudge of humane actions, so moderated the execution of his diuine iustice, that whatsoeuer complots this architect of euill counsell, meant to haue throwne downe vpon the head of *Cesar*, the very same befell his own person, euen when he thought himselfe to stand vpon so sure a ground, as to be an onely Spectator of the ensuing troubles.

For *Cesar* beeing awakened at the Report of so famous

Sleyd. li. 6.
Feronius ubi
supra.

mous a Confederacie, dispatched into *Italy* the Duke of *Burbon & Fromberg*, Captaines of admirable reputation for their cariage in the last warres; with warrant to defend *Naples*, now by the tenor of the league giuen in prey to warre and dis-vnion.

These Leaders pretending, as if they meant to passe by *Florence*, now growen proud by the continuance of peace, their mighty Citizen the Pope, and the late league; at last bending their courle by the mountaines and rocks, vpon the sixt day of May, they solemnly entered *Rome*: droue *Clement* into the Bastil of *Adrian*; and vpon want of all necessaries (his Bulls, his Breues and execrations, thicke and threefold breathed out against the *Germanes* and *Spaniards*, standing him in no stead) compelled him to yeeld; but with so seruile and base conditions, as vpon the like, neuer did Souldier to this day, giue vp his fort.

The insolency of the *Spaniard*, and the inhumanity of the *Germane*, I am not able in apt words to display. See *Guicciardine*, and the Histories of those times.

For besides their horrible pillagings, their spoiles, their rauishments, and their waits, no kinde of scorne was left vnpractised against the Pope & his Cardinals: All without difference were alike made captiues, all alike tortured: He that was rāsome to day by the *Spanish*, to morrow was again in durance to the *Germanes*.

Cesar writeth his letters to the Pope and the King of *England*, that all this happened besides his priuity or command; yea, that he would not acknowledge such transgressors for his souldiers, who durst attempt so wicked a seruice. Yet sticketh hee not to attribute the mishap to the secret iudgements of God; who would

not

Like for like, by
Cesar to the
Pope.

not suffer so grosse an indignity concluded against the Maiesty of the sacred Empire, to escape without punishment. *Bona verba.*

The Pope being restored to liberty, maketh shew of great friendship, but in secret worketh him all possible vexation.

For either vpon hope to possesse the Kingdome of *Naples* (a precise condition in the articles) or else in desire of reuenge, he so wrought with the *French* king to renew the warre, that at his direction *Lautrick* was sent into *Italy*, for the conquest thereof. But such was the event, that *Lautrick* died; the pestilence raged through the Camp; and nothing was effected. Whereupon, the *French* king for the loue of his children (as yet captiues in *Spaine*) was glad to accept of the proffered conditions. The Bishop, alwaies accustomed to goe with the streame, vpon the peace perfected at *Cambray*, betweene the Emperour, the *French*, and the other Princes, enstalleth *Charles* at *Bononia*, with the Imperial diadem, and aydeth him in the siege and conquest of *Florence*; the people whereof hee saw punished most severely. But his Holines had not forgotten to requite *Charles* with many like courtesies, if God had bestowed longer life vpon him.

For within three yeeres after, hee had plotted a league with *Francis* the *French* King at *Marsellis*, to take *Millan* from *Cesar*, & to inuade *Sauoy*; bestowing his niece *Katherin* vpon his sonne *Henry*, if, to the good of the Christian common-wealth, he had not bene by death preuented, and that, not without the suspicion of poison, as some suppose.

Could a more treacherous man be found liuing then

If such the men
continually, the
what their Reli-
gion?

then this *Clement*, who continually being taken into fauour and alliance with *Cesar*, continually betrayed his faith, and of a dissembling friend, euermore proued a professed enemie.

After the decease of *Clement*, succeeded *Alexander Farnesius*, otherwise *Paul* the third, a man almost spent with age, yet of a farre more subtile disposition.

Hec omnia ex-
posita exstant
apud Sleyd.
li. 17. sq. ad
lib. 23.

For vpon obseruation, that the controuersies in religion did daily more and more augment, and propagate, with singular affection he studied *Cesars* fauour; but to no other purpose, then in thirst of the German bloud, to combine his Maiestie and the other Princes, in stricter bonds of perseuerance, to take armes against the *Lutherans*; hypocritically giuing out to all persons, and in all places, and that vpon his faith, that hee would speedily assemble the Generall counsell, so often petitioned, and promised to the Germane Nation.

To winne time.

And surely so he did, first proclaiming it to be held at *Mantua*, then at *Verona*, and lastly after the expiration of many yeares at *Trent*: but not with any intention to salue the greeuances of the Christian Commonweale, or the distemperature of the Church: but that by holding the Germanes in suspence vpon the finall determinations of the Council; meane time he might win time to effectuate his secret resolutions; viz. the suppression of the truth, and the restitution of *Germanie*, now through the light of the Gospell beginning to shake off Babilonian tyrannie, to it pristinat captivity. So in the yeare of our Lord 1546. he celebrateth the Councell at *Trent*, and maketh all possible faire weather with the Germanes. But with what intent? surely to combine the nobility, & to instigate his Ma-
iestie

iestie to begin the warre against the *Protestant* Princes, and the *Euangelicall Cities*. In the beginning whereof, good fortune prognosticated a prosperous progresse vnto *Cesar* (by the taking of *John Frederick* Elector of *Saxonie*; the *Landgrau* of *Hessen*; the confiscating of all *Wittembergs* estates, and the sinacing of many confederat Cities) yet, in being too officious to giue his Holines content, in keeping his prisoners more strictly then Honour could warrant, and in coyning new articles of religion to the Popes best liking; such an alteration followed, vpon therising of *Maurice* Prince Elector, and *Albert* of *Brandenburg*, and other new confederates, that (dismissing the captiuated Princes, and granting liberty of Conscience through *Germanie*) so disaduantageous were his proofes of papall countenance, that he often wished, that he had preferred the loues of the Princes, before the Popes surest alliance.

For although (to confesse truth) the proceedings of *Paul* against his Maiestie, were slower and better caried, then those of his predeceffors; in regard that hee was his Champion, to manage bloody and difficult stratagems against the seruants of God: yet vpon the death of *Peter Aloysius* duke of *Parma & Placentia* (murdered by treason for his tyrannie) when *Ferdinand Gonzaga*, *Cesars* Generall, and Gouvernour of *Millan*, was inuested in his stead: the Pope presently mistrusteth *Cesar* for an author of the murder; and in vaine requesting the Restitution of *Placentia*, he strait starteth from *Cesar*, and bethinkerh himselfe how to ioyne with the *French*: And had ioyned in deed, if hee had longer liued; the time offering so fit an opportunity.

For

Mamb. Ryseus.
li. 4. appendicis
ad Historiam
Neapolita. Pã-
dulphi collenu-
tij hæc latè ex-
plicat.

For now *Henry* vpon the defeature of the Princes, and the seizing on *Placentia* (about expectation) growing into ieaousie of the powerfullnesse of *Cesar*, reneweth his league with the Switzers, and strengthneth his party with friends on all hands.

But in midst of these reuengefull deuises, this miser dyed, distracted more through griefe and anguish, then any infirmity of Age: the tenth day of Nouember. 1549.

Sleid. li. 21. l. 26.

After long wrangling in the Conclauē, 1550. *Iulius* the third is saluted Pope: being before his installment, of the French faction, and after, so giuen ouer to belly-cheere and venery, that he died of a Lethargy, and wanted rather leisure then will to attempt against *Cesar*.

But *Paul* the fourth a most diuelish Hypocrite, and next succeeding *Marcellus* the second, (a Pope also of a few daies standing) by the packing of the Cardinalls wholly deuoted to the French seruice, was consecrated High Priest: This man during his Cardinalship, was *Cesars* most malicious enemy: Inasomuch that by his prouocation, *Paul* the third was perswaded to invade *Naples*, as an apourtenāt of the Church. But now enioying fuller meanes to worke fuller despights, hee maketh open profession of his late concealed malice, and prosecuteth his followers with indignities of deepest fury. For no sooner was he seated in the Chaire of the scarlet Beast, but he casteth into durance *Alexander Farnesius* Cardinall of *Sanflorian*, *Camillus Colonna*, and *Iulianus Cesar* with his brother the Archbishop, vpon suspition of a conspiracy complotted against him in fauour of the Imperialists. As many the Seruants and ministers of *Cesar*, here and there negotiating

*M. Roscius li. 4.
append. ad Hist.
Neopolit.
Hieronymus Rosellus
de bello Romano.*

ring his affaires through *Italy*, as he could lay hands on, he seazeth; and amongst these, *Tuscis* master of the forests to his maiesty, and *don Garzia Laffus* a Duke of no obscure reputation amongst the Spanish.

Marke Anthonie Colonna beeing absent, he citeth to appeare before him within three daies space; and in default of appearance, hee maketh prize of his goods.

To *John* Count of *Montorian*, he giueth the goods of *Ascanius Colonna*, together with the titular Earldome of *Pallianum*.

In despight of *Cesar* he recalleth the Out-lawed gentlemen of *Naples*, and endoweth them with offices, and publique preheminences.

At the instance of *Peter Stroza*, he fortifieth *Pallianum*, and prepareth it for the receipt of the French to the infesting of *Naples*.

Finally, by sending his kinsman Cardinall *Caraffa* into *France*, most impiously he disturbeth the peace concluded in *Belgia*, betweene his most excellent Maiesty and the French Monarch.

And to bee especially carefull, that no one shot of Popish malice should misse his Maiesty, he absolutely denieth his sonne *Philip* (vnto whom the father had resigned the administration of all his kingdoms) the investiture of the kingdomes of *Naples* and *Sicily*, being held of the Church. Vherupon followed such furious and lamentable wars, managed between these mighty potentates of Christendome, that *Italy* and *France* being chiefly ingaged therein, reeked againe in the bloody tragedies of their dearest Citizens.

For not *Rome* only was almost brought vnto those extremities

*Guil. Zenocarus
de vita caroli. 5.*

At Saint
Quintins.

extremities by the presence of the Duke of *Alua*, which once it suffered in the daies of *Clement*, and for the present auoided by accepting of these conditions, which the now-somewhat-lenified Lord Generall propounded: but the French also in fauour of the Papacy, being sent into *Italy* vnder the conduct of the Guise, to infect the peacefull estate of the Latian prouinces, vnderwent the miserable destiny of vnfortunate warfare, in their indeauours to thrust in new forces into the chiefe City of *Vermendois*, against the Squadrons of King *Philip*, marching out of *Belgia* to the reliefe of the said place. In which conflict their whole army was routed by the Germane Horfe, the Constable, the Rhene-graue, and many noble men taken prisoners, and the City forced.

And not long after being masters of *Calaies*, they suffered a no lesse disastrous defeature in their returne by *Graneling* at Count *Egmonds* hands: *Termes* and *Villebon* their two most famous leaders beeing taken prisoners, their armie routed, and their people slaine.

Now, what vpriht conscience can sauour a Religion so insatiate of blood? or what Christian can thinke that Man, who to perfect his owne respects, careth not what mischief he worketh, to be the Vicar of Christ?

Surely, Let them impudently affirme what they list, their workes so perspicuously layde open to meanest capacities, may with sufficiencie assure vs, that through the whole course of their successions, they haue euer rather merited the Sir-names of *Sauile*, then the least title of *Paul*. And so to the worlds end will they doe,

doe, rather then by the redceming of one Christian soule from spoile and blood shed, they will suffer one Acre of *Saint Peters* imaginary patrimony, to be wrested from them, if possibility or trecherous pollicy can any way withstand it.

Ferdinand Caesar.

Hee reigned 1558. About the fift yeere of
Queene Mary.



AS soone as *Charles* had betaken himselfe to a solitarie life in *Saint Iustus* in *Spaine*, his brother *Ferdinand* long before elected King of the Romanes, now by the generall suffrage of the Electors assembled at *Frankford*, is preferred vnto the Empire. After the ceremonies whereof accomplished, to make manifest his obseruancie towards the Romish Sea, he dispatcheth to his Holinesse *Guzman*, his chiefe chamberlaine; to signifie, that his Maiesties pleasure was, vpon oportunitie offirst-offered-occasion, to request and receiue the imperiall Diadem at his Holinesse Hands. But such was his father-hoods arrogant and froward answer: that it may well argue the Relator, not onely not to be the successor of *Peter*, who with the residue of the Apostles, reuerenced the authoritic of the higher powers, as the ordinance of

X 2

God,

God, with due honour and obedience: no, nor a man willing to doe one good turne for another, according to the mutuall lawes of courtesie and humanity: but in truth, that very Antichrist, whom the warrant of *Holy writ* doth point out, to be the person, who should arrogate to himselfe, to prescribe aboue, and against any thing, that God himselfe hath commanded to be holy and inuiolable.

For this irregular *Beast*, would vpon no reason acknowledge *Ferdinand* for Emperour; cauling that his predeceffour *Charles*, had no ability or capacity to surrender the Empire to no lining creature, but to the Romish Sea; Neither that it was lawfull for *Ferdinand*, to take vpon him the administration of the State, without the approbation thereof.

His Maiesties Embassadour hee would at no hand suffer to approach his presence; but hauing learnt out the tenour of his Embassie, hee propounded vnto the Cardinals and Lawyers certaine questions, neither arising from the rudiments of Gods word, nor enforced from the grounds of Nationall Lawes; but harried from the deepest Abyffe, and there discussed by *Lucifer* the Prince of malice, pride and falsities. Which, as afterward they were libelled out, and dispersed by the Romanists themselues, you shall here receiue.

1 If *Guzman*, who auerreth that *Hee* is sent from his Lord *Ferdinand*, vnto the most Holy Lord the Pope, ought by Law to speake what *Charles* the fifth hath done, about the resignation of the Empire to his brother

brother *Ferdinand*.

2 Which being sufficiently vnderstoode; whether they, wholly, or in part haue done rightfully and lawfully, sithence the *Approbation* of the most Holy Lord the Pope, and the Apostolique sea, was not interposed therein.

3 Whether, these difficulties being cleared; nothing for the present may bee objected against the person of the most excellent Lord *Ferdinand*. Whereby, hee may be adiudged incapable of the Imperiall dignity: *As the euill education of his sonne the king of Bohem, inclinable to manifest heresie*. It beeing promised, that within the Kingdomes subiect to his authority, heresies are tollerated without punishment; Catholiques are oppressed, Monasteries dissolved, Churches auoided, and the Professours of the Augustane reformation, suffered to conuerse and inhabite promiscuousslie with Romish Catholiques.

As also, that *Ferdinand* himselfe did graunt a conference at *wormes*, as touching controuerfies in Religion, without the consent and good leaue of the Holy Apostolique Sea. That, Hee bound himselfe by oath in the Dyet of *Frankford*, to obserue all the Articles confirmed in the fore passed Sessions; wherein manie damnable and Hereticall opinions were maintained and allowed. That, Hee vsurped the Name of *Emperour* by his owne Authority. That he suspended the Decree, published against Communicants vnder both kindes; especially at such a time, wherein seuerest execution was most requisite: That

he had falsified his oath, taken vpon his first election of King of *Romanes* (wherein he had bound himselfe, to be a defender of the Church, and the Catholique faith) schismes, heresies, and the Protestant Religion. That he had faulted in many more points of like kind, against his oath, and the Holy Canons.

4 What in like manner were to be determind concerning the persons of many the Princes Electors, who being notoriously knowen to haue forsaken the *Romish religion*, haue agreed to this *Resignation*: And how all these mischiefs may be preuented and remedied with the least disturbance and breach of Tranquility to the Christian Common-wealth. These were the points to be questioned by the Cardinals.

No true Popish
motion: but in
these dayes the
Turk is growen
too neere a
neighbour.

Now albeit the Method of the Narration doe binde me, to acquaint you with the Resolutions of these Creatures the Cardinals (for surely I know it is a part of my task to diue into the cunning intendments of these proposed questions:) Notwithstanding, the incompatible pride of the Romanists; their tyrannizing ouer all Lawes, and the indignity of such base, wicked, and malicious propositions, doe wholly diuert mee from my intended Method, forcibly compelling me against the Rules of Historie, to walke a long digression from my intended Narration. For which, I beseech thee (Reader) pardon and patience.

For who vpon mature deliberation of such scruples, knowing the *Author* by whom they were propounded, can refraine from accursing this so fanatical ambition of Soueraigntie in a Bishop, accompanied with such horrible impiety & contempt of his euermourning Masters commandement? What conscience
can

can but blush at his impudencie, who hauing by Gods permission for our manifold sinnes tyrannized ouer the Church of Christ for so many yeares, would yet at this day, in despite of light and truth, reduce Kings and Princes into the auncient estate of their Babilonical seruitude? Not once looking back vpon such like narrations as these, (taken out from their owne Records) to consider, how their predecessors to work their wils vpon mighty Potentates (for *hic Aquila non captat muscas, & quicquid delirant Reges, plectuntur Achiui.*) haue made no more conscience by secret and cunning practises, to imbrue the whole Christian world in blood and desolation; then a Turkish Generall by falsifying his faith, hath done against conquered Christians. Yea, I dare auow, (for *experientia optima magistra*) that by hooke or crooke, at this day they would as eagerly follow their Canonial presidents, to restore their *Entrados* (*hinc ille Lachrimae*) as euer did any of their Luciferian predecessors. Were it not, but that they apprehend, how the Turkish forces, first by land affront the Empire from the Carpathie Mountaines to the Ardiatique: Secondly by sea, how at diuers times, but especially in the yeare of our Lord 1534. *Barbarussa* so scoured alongst the coast of *Italy*, that if he had descended a little lower to *Ostia*, *actum esset de Roma*. His Holiness must haue resorted to auncient deuises, *viz.* peraduenture haue sought a new *Auignon* in *Thule* or *China*, whether his Iesuites are already imployed to prepare his way. But this is not all the feare, wherewith these mercilesse fellowes haue terrified his holy wise dome.

Muslipha at
Famagusta.

Tunc tua res
agitur, &c.

For the world doth know, that for a whole Winter

Read the Tur-
kish Historie for
the bottome of
their inforced
lenities.

ter they haue set footing in *Italy*, and wasted *Friuli*. Which to preuent, by the best meanes, wherewith God hath truely inabled him, and the residue of the Christian Princes, if they be not prouident, I can but pray, that his diuine Maiesty would be pleased, to resume the welfare of his people into his owne protection. And so to the Responsc of the Cardinals.

Who confessing the weightinesse of the questions to be such, as partly in regard of the nouelty, partly in regard of the qualitie of the persons, and lastlie in regard of the trouble of the times, and the power of the infidell enemy, they ought to be examined in a full counsell of the choicest and discreetest wisdomes; yet either in wayward affectation to preserue the Papall Authority, or in feare of his bestiall furiousnesse, malitiously powred out on all sorts without difference; they returned an answer rather testifying some such imagination, then any way fauouring of truth or integrity.

And thus it was. That, it ought to bee prooued by publique Euidence, whether it appeared, that the Empire became voide by Charles his Resignation, or by some other meanes. That, it ought to be sifted how Ferdinand could pretend to succeed: meane time that his Embassador sent to Proxy his obedience, or to negotiate any other publique Act, ought not to be admitted. That all things treated of and ratified at Frankford concerning Ferdinands election, were voide, frustrate and of no effect, for that the Scepter of the Apostolike Sea (vnto whome at first the keyes of all heavenly and earthly power were giuen) was not first mediated. That those worthy personages who were assisting and tainted of hereticall impiety, had forfeited all the rites and prerogatives, of old granted them, concerning the election

election of Emperors. As touching the points objected against his Maiesty in the third article: That it was of greatest consequence, and had need of penance: which being performed, his Holinesse was to proceed according to fatherlie clemency. Whereupon a Procurator was to be sent from his Popishnesse, to renounce all the sanctions and decrees ratified at Frankford. After publication whereof, and the Empire now voide, a new mandat might bee made to petition Confirmation, for that it is apparant, that by vertue of the Election, adioyned to Clement his Confirmation, Ferdinand ought to succcede in the Empire.

As concerning the impediment procured by his owne default, and somewhat hindering him; It ought to bee put to Examination: That after absolution obtained, obedience performed, and the auncient oath of fidelity administred, he may fully enioy the confirmation of the Apostolique Court. whose only and peculiar propertie it is, to wide open its Armes, lowingly and halfe way (as it were) to imbrace euerie liuing soule comming to be receiued vpon repentance, and flying thereunto with a liuelie faith.

O you Romanists! here let mee aske you, which of you dare presume to say, that hee is more holie, or more religious, then Ferdinand? What is his sinne so greatly to bee repented of? What manner of repentance is that, which you so much desire? or how, shall he hope to speede, if hee stand to your waueing and dispensatorie discretions? Here is no fault committed against God: his word doth warrant his proceedings. The fundamental lawes of the Empire do auouch that an Emperer being chosen by al the Electors, or
T the

*Vide de hoc
constit. Lodouici
4. apud Albe-
ric. de Rosate L.
Benè a Zenone
C. de quadrien.
prescript.*

*Lib. de concord.
Cathol. cap. 4.*

the more part of them, upon the very election, without approbation of Pope, or any other forraine Potentate, is to be receiued for true and indubitate Emperor. Cardinall Cusanus saith:

Electores, qui communi consensu omnium Almanorum & aliorum qui imperio subiecti erant, tempore secundi Henrici constituti sunt, radicalem vim habent ab ipso communi omnium consensu, qui sibi naturali iure Imperatorem constituere poterant: non ab ipso Romano Pontifice, in cuius potestate non est, dare cuicunque provincie per mundum Regem vel Imperatorem; ipsa non consentiente.

The Electors who were instituted by the common assent of all the Almanes, and others the subiects of the Empire, in the time of Henrie the second: by the said generall consent haue a successiue power, by their municipiall lawes to chuse vnto themselves an Emperour. Without depending vpon the Pope, in whose power it is not, to limit vnto any prouince vnder the cope of heauen, a King or gouernour, without its owne agreement.

But admit there were no such law, is not the inauguration of all Princes meerly temporall? are not the setting on of a Crown, the girding of a sword, and the deliuey of a Scepter, orders meerly ceremoniall? where are then your interessed claimes? I will leaue you to your wits, and proceede to your starting-holes of *spiritualia*; Which I am sure consist in suffering the people to receiue the blessed Communion vnder both kinds. Here is a sinne vn pardonable. Stay, I beseech you. Did not Paul the third, and he a Pope, send

out

out his Bulls, wherby he gaue all the Bishops throughout *Germanie* full authority to communicate vnto the people vnder both kinds? How say ye? Shall his Maiesty be exempted, and they priuiledged? will you tolerate an order of your owne inacting in euery parish, and not suffer the magistrate to see the same by peace and quietnesse preferred and executed through a whole kingdom? you know vpon what points of necessity, that Bull was granted, and now rather then you will faile to make odious his sacred Maiesty to the fauours of your passions, you will quarrell him about an act of your owne allowance. Woe vnto you, you Hypocrits, who in words seeme Saints, but in your hearts retaine not a graine of piety. Woe vnto you, who offer your open breasts to penitentiaries, but hauing them in your clutches, you teare them in their consciences with more then heathenish foppery. You inioine penance to others, and performe no such matter your selues. Amongst your selues, yee reueale all secrets, and are Iouiall thereat; but treasons and massacres you conceale, and then your impudent wits must beare you out, (for your faces will not) that it was told vnder the vaile of confession. Thus by impostures you liue, you raigne, and deceiue the world, neither caring to enter heauens gates themselves nor suffering others to enter that would.

Well, during the *Interim* of these ponderous machinations against his Maiesty by the college of Cardinalls, *Guzman* comming to the vnderstanding thereof, day by day hasteneth his Audience before his Holinesse. At last after three moneths attendance, and earnest begging (but not before hee had receiued a more

Y^a

strict

Strange conclusions in Poperie.

strict commandement from his Master) either vpon audience to execute his commission, or without delay to returne from *Rome*, hee is admitted to speake in the presence of seuen Cardinals, from whom hee receiue this aunswere. *Forasmuch as his demaund required the most mature deliberation of the Cardinals, and such like persons learned in the Lawes, that, according to his Masters commaund hee might depart at pleasure: meane time his Holinesse would recall the whole matter vnto full examination.*

Note the Ena-
sion.

Good GOD, what other deliberation could be meant heereby, more then a meere cunning, and dilatorie illusion? For the matter had beene againe and againe disputed on, and the confirmation so long delayed, in expectation of some disaster, which Time might produce against *Caesar*, that before any thing was determined, this *politique Impostor* was taken out of this world. After whom departed vnto the place of eternall blisse this worthy Emperour; but so, that the confirmation which *Clement* made litigious, *Pius* the fourth offered willingly, and *Ferdinand* reiected as constantly, after the examples of *Radulph* of *Habsburge* his progenitor, and *Maximilian* his Grandfather, contenting himselfe with the orderly election of the German Princes.

I haue heard report of as weighty a toleration as this, euen in matters of religion, if as vertuous a Princeesse, as any of these afore-named, would haue condescended to haue accepted the approbation at his Holinesses hand. And as the world now standeth, who doubteth but the Pope would doe much to be reconciled to some Christian *Constantines*.

And

And therefore to conclude, I hold it not fit to conceale these worthy remembrances of his godlinesse and sincerity; That in his raigne, in the yeare 1552. the second day of August, an Edict was obtained, whereby peace was graunted to the professors of the *Augustan* confession.

That, in the yeare 1555. that noble Decree followed, wherein it was ordained, that *no force, nor offence, directly or indirectly, in case of Religion should be thenceforth vsed against Prince, Earle, or any imperiall Citie.*

In the yeare 1559. at *Augusta*, in a full assembly of the States, the said Decree was reuiued and confirmed.

After which Constitutions confirmed by the transaction of *Passavia*, and confirmed by the Estates (as I saide at *Ausburg*) this good Emperour perswading himselfe, that mens mindes were wrought to Religion, more by preaching and teaching, then by force and bloud-shed; was willing, euen within his owne hereditarie possessions, *That no subiect of his should bee troubled for his conscience.* Wishing, that some abuses (vsed by the Romanists) might by lawfull and moderate proceedings be reformed, and yet the Hierarchie and order of the Ecclesiastical policy, be decently maintained.

Whereupon, when the *Austrians* desired the publique vse of the Lords supper in both kindes; as also other articles of religion, to be freely permitted them, which they had drawn forth in the confession of *Ausburg*; *Ferdinand*, not onely tooke the articles, and the

Y 3

reasons

reasons of the abuses (deserving reformation) into his owne consideration: but also, when he heard the testimonie of the Greeke Church, concurring with the petition, hee sent *Urban* Bishop of *Gurcia* for this cause principally to *Venice*, that there he should procure instructions, how the Greekes accustomed to doe in distribution of this part of the Lords supper: as also what was their *Opinion* concerning this maine point of doctrine. And in the Synod of *Trent* by his *Orators*, he did most instantly insist and vrge; That by leaue of the Pope, the people of *Austria* might vse both the parts of the Sacrament.

Somewhat before his death, he receaued the *Breue*, authorizing the Communion to be administred vnto the Laity vnder both kindes, which *Pius* the fourth sent vnto the Archbishop of *Salisburge*; but interlaced with diuers limitation of conditions. Vherat this good Emperour did exceedingly reioyce, and gaue thanks that it pleased God, that he had obtained that, which his subjects of *Austria*, had so often, and so earnestly desired of his Maiestie.

For his carriage towards the *Counsell of Trent*, which he referred wholly to his Holinesse, I hold it not fit to speake. For he adiudged, that hee had receiued an infinite pleasure from the Pope, in that he had graunted him that, (though by much intreaty and many restrictions) which Christ commanded vnto all Christians, plainly and effectually.

Maximilian

Maximilian the second.

Hee began his raigne in the sixt yeare of
Queene Elizabeth.

Better fortunes, then his father and uncle *Charles*, had not *Maximilian* the second, from whom concerning the ample promises of *Clement* the seuenth, wee haue heard this saying to proceed: *It is surely Jacobs voice; but his hands denote him to be Esau*: vehemently complaining, *That euermore these people haue violated their faith, and broken their leagues: That against all right and equitie, their words are of no validity, nor their oathes of force.* And therefore hereafter neuer to be captiuated with security.

He was created Emperour in the yeare of our Lord 1564. A Prince of a sincere disposition, especially in matters of religion: which when hee perceiued to be sorely shaken and rent, with diuersity of opinions; hee grieved in minde, but shewed himselfe indifferent to the professors thereof, neuer hindring the course with any seuerer edict.

Which his godly moderation, caused the *Romanists* to offer him some hard measure surely not to be said, to haue vtterly washt away the contagion of their ancient treacherie and malice, in esse diuolued vpon them from the successiue discent of so many their predecessors. But this worthy Prince was nothing moued thereat,

thereat, neither started one iot from his accustomed lenitie. *Crato Craßheim* his Councillor and Physition, a man beyond all exception, shall witnesse it in his funerrall Oration. *The Emperor Maximilian neuer entred into iudgement of another mans Conscience, but alwaies in controuersie of Religion forbore by force to settle mens minds. For he confessed in the hearing of many men ten yeeres agoe, vnto William Prelate of Olomuch: That no sinne was more greuous, then the forcing of Consciences,* Many are also aliue who remember what hee said to a Prince flying his kingdome, and in his flight resorting vnto him for succour: *Surely those that arrogate power ouer mens consciences, innuade the bulwarkes of Heauen; and oftentimes loose that Authority, which God here hath giuen them vpon earth.*

Such care and study as *Father Ferdinand* vsed in obseruing the Pacification of *Passavia*, the same the sonne *Maximilian* emulated and defended, permitting vnto the Austrian Nobility the doctrine of the confession of *Ausburg* by edict, dated the 18. August. 1568.

For when as many noble men of *Austria* vnder the gouernment of *Ferdinand*, had presented vnto *Charles* the fift, certaine Euangelicall ministers professing the Confession of *Ausburg*; and amongst these; many turbulent spirits dismissed vpon many occasions from many parts of *Germanie*, had resorted vnto his gouernment as to a place of security; And vnder blinde pretences of Euangelicall liberty had inconsiderately innouated and tumultuously preached many things concerning Church-gouernement: This *Maximilian* after the example of his father, thought it not meet to prohibit his subiects the confession of *Ausburg*; and yet

yet forbore not to restraine that anarchiall temerity of such hot spirits, throughout euery seuerall vilage of the Prouince, almost teaching and instituting a peculiar forme of Doctrine and Ceremonies.

At last at the earnest entreaty and humble petitions of the Austrian Nobility, he permitted them the free exercise of the Augustan confession, both in Churches and families, so that they would assure him to obserue that certaine order of doctrine and celebration of the Lords supper, throughout all their Churches, which as then was already vsed and imbraced by the residue of the Protestant Churches, according to the prescript of order of the said confession. For reformation whereof he emploied *Ioachim Camerarius* and *Dauid Chytreus*: and the promise once granted, being afterwards Emperor he obserued most religiously. Of whose faith and integrity, although to his neuer dying honour much may be spoken, yet here will we cease, and fall to discourse vpon the succession of his Sonne *Rodolph*. What further matter the good and well minded Reader may expect, I will leaue to his own discretion to be exemplified, by the application of these old verses:

*Tempora mutantur, Papa & mutatur in illis:
Felix quem faciunt Romana pericula cautum.*

Z

Rodolph

RODOLPH now onely remaineth. Here, whether I should admire at the busie, but now out-worne fury, tyranny and ambition of these selfe-wild Bishops: or reioice at the restored magnanimity, fortitude, and constancy of our Emperour *Rodolph*, I confesse my selfe grauelled. But to affirme nothing of mine owne braine, here behold a witnesse acting his own part; A man aboue exception, auouching—

He is the same, who was Author of the Commēntary vpon the *Coloin Businesse*. These are his words; *What (saith hee) should I speake of the inuincible Emperour Rodolph, who now raigneth. I haue seene his Embassadours at Rome, the most noble and valiant Lord Flacchus, Prior of the Order of Saint Iohn of Ierusalem in Germany, and Ierome Turner of his Maiesties Councell: A man of exquisit learning, of high wisdom, faithfull and honest. I sojourned with them in the same house, For they lodged with Cardinall Mandratius (whome for honours sake I name) my very honourable good Master, and a man of excellent vertues. He for acquaintance sake entertained them kindly, and vsed them royally: they stayed with vs almost one whole summer: of which delay this was the cause.*

The Pope, *Gregorie* the thirteenth was wonderfull desirous to haue the Emperour performe his obedience to his Popeship. For, *that it ought so to be*, he pleaded

ded *prescription*. The Ambassadors, to doe more then their Commission warranted, resolutely refused. And their Commission stretched no further, then to promise *Obsequium*, his humble seruice to the Pope, but obedience vnto the Church.

Letters hereof were sent vnto his Maiesty, and meane while *Turner* was eagerly assaulted by the Cardinals to change opinion; but he was constant. At last, vntill the Emperors Maiesty could be wrought, to relinquish that forme of words, which the worthy and laudable *Cæsars*, *Ferdinand* his grandfather and *Maximilian* his father had vsed, the Embassador was accepted to do what he was commanded. And so in a full assembly of the Cardinals, the Pope being mounted vpon an high Seig, *Hee promised his Holinesse his seruice, and the Church, his obedience.* In action whereof he gaue good proofes of his learning, wisdom, and admirable boldnesse.

To many in the City, this seemed a ridiculous contention, sithence the words *obsequium* and *obedientia* doe so little differ in substance: but let them laugh; The Popes rites well vnderstand the meaning thereof, otherwise, let them bee assured, that his wisdom would not so stily haue insisted vppon the bare word of obedience.

As for the Emperour, the world knoweth, that here he made it manifest, that hee was not bound to giue obedience vnto a Bishop, his subiect, from whome hee expected subiection and fealtie: At leastwise he layde an excellent foundation, towards the restitution of the decayed Honour of the Empire, by others to be perfected as God and time shall offer occasion.

casion. For what a greater blessing can a Christian man wish, then to see a Bishop praying and preaching, and abhorring to prescribe lawes vnto a temporall Emperour? What other thing more necessarie for peace and humane society can the *Councel of State* deuise, then to bridle feditious mindes, from taking aduantage to disquiet the State, vpon euery sinister seducement of an vnconscionable Iesuite? Which if they once effect, then shall the Emperours giue them their due fauours, that is, acknowledge the *Lateran Bishops* to be *venerable fathers*. If these passages, I say, were reduced to their pristinate forme and integrity, then no longer should wee behold the Christian people turmoyled in discords, no Princes murdered, no oaths of allegiance impugned, no equiuocation iustified, nor Turkish inuasions so powerfully maintained.

But of these abuses, and many more mentioned by mine Author, and still maintained, but not with ancient obstinacie, for want of this implored reformation, let him that hath a stomach to bee informed, read the Apology, brought out of *Spain*, and printed at *Antwerp* in the yeare 1527. There in order shall hee finde as much as followeth, the summe whereof drawen into heads, shall suffice for this present.

1 The *Breues* of *Clement* the seuenth, wherein hee loadeth *Cesar* with as many calumniationes, as his witte could deuise, and those most false and forged.

2 The aunswere of the Emperour *Charles* the fifth vnto these forgeries.

3 The

3 The second *Breues* of the Pope, wherein vpon repentance that hee had falsly accused *Cesar*, hee sendeth vnto his *Nuncio*, to forbid him the deliury of the former *Breues*.

4 The answer of *Cesar* to these second *Breues*.

5 An Epistle of *Charles Cesar* vnto the Colledge of *Cardinals*, desiring them, that in case his Holinesse did continue either to denie, or differ, a generall Councell, that they themselues would proclaime it.

Now that wee haue fully informed you how this halfe-deplumed Estritch hath notwithstanding opposed against the two last Emperours, *Ferdinand* and *Maximilian*, and not at this day feareth not to bee troublesome vnto their successour *Rodolph*: As also, how his patience hath beene nettled by the transaction of *Passauia*, and the Edicts of peace deuised, ratified and proclaimed by these three late worthy Emperours: It shall not for a perclous vnto your wearied mindes, I hope, proue a loathing seruice, if I shall in order recite vnto you, at what warde his Holinesse at this day lieth, considering that hee is not able any longer, to set father against sonne, and sonne against father in open action; Prince against Prince, and people against Prince, and Prince against people.

These practises are reuealed and absolute, now must they erect (and but once erect) an order to purpose; An order that must commit all villanies, and his Popeship not seene therein: an order that must studie Matchiauell, entertaine intelligence, and able in

Z 3

it.

*Vitneffe
France, Bel-
gia, and Hun-
garie.*

it selfe to negotiat in Princes affaires, without posting and reposting, to the view of the world, for their dispatches to *Rome*: an order of all orders that euer were deuised, the most cruell and truly bestial; the bane of mankind, and the fire-brands of Christendome. Of whom, if any worthy pen would take the paines, to indict a Legend; the world should soone perceiue, that they to the vnderpropping of this declining sea, within these few yeares, haue committed as many forgeries, villanies, and seducements to warre and murder, as their Masters before them haue done in many Ages. So furious are their humours, so irregular their consciences to worke, pleasing seruices to their politique Monarch! Bound they are to auert, whatsoeuer they shall thinke or know preiudiciall to the Romish sea. Bound they are (as much as in them lieth) to hinder the propagation of the Gospel. Then, their calling being such, their seruice such, and such their vows, let vs learne amongst many of their actions, by some few, what peace in religion is to be expected, from such persons, that hereafter we may be able to discern the man by his speech, as the Lion by his clawes.

Notes of priuate passion.

*Onely because
it reformed
Popery.*

HE that playeth the Prologue, is *Conradus Brunus*, attired in his third booke. cap. i. pag. 305. oppugning, railing and annihilating the Transaction of *Pasavia*, and the peace granted thereupon; a peace so religiously ratified by such and so many hand-writings, and so solemnly sworne vnto by such iust, honourable and worthy personages. At his first entrance you shall

shall know him by his brazen face, and now you shall heare him speake. The Edict (saith hee) is friuolous, void, and at no hand to be obserued: His reason, because a Catholique ought not liue peaceably with such Heretiques, for so should they neuer be offended nor abolished. Yea, so much the rather were the association so ordered to be abhorred and abominable, for that a Catholique meeting one of them, should be adjudged to haue assented to the peace: But to offend them (with whom there is no communion) can be no breach of peace; as whom the Lawes of the Empire doe subiect vnder a curse, and expose to offence, without punishment: Finally, whom all diuine and humane constitutions, would haue to be vtterly extirpated.

The next that presenteth himselfe is *Paul Windich*, in his booke *de Hereticis extirpandis* pag. 324. And hee termeth this *religious peace* to be nothing but a breaching, a delay, or a toleration. pag. 327. He saith, that, in his minde, he can but wonder at the madnesse of the Sectaries. For foolishly auouching, and so often babbling out the Decrees of the Diets, for the free exercise of their religion. If I should stand to present you with *Melchion, Hosius* and *Posserinus*, who wrote whole discourses vnto *Henry* and *Stephan* Kings of *Polonia*, to take into their serious cogitations, the extirpation of the Euangelicall professors, I should but weary you with words. Two lines shall suffice. *With the Protestant (Polonians) the assurance giuen vpon Faith, is at no hand to be obserued: for that an oath ought not to be the bond of iniquitie.*

James Menochius the Lawyer, Consil. 100. Num. 225. excuseth.

excuseth the Romane Emperor *Sigismund*, in that he violated his safe conduct. As concerning the which ouersight, the impudent assertions of the Iesuits of Treuers are worthy the relation, published in a certaine booke intituled, *The Concertation of the Catholicke Church*, Printed 1583. pag. 4. *Husse* did require safe conduct of *Sigismund*: *Sigismund* signed it: but the *Christian world*, viz. the fathers of the Council of *Constance*, being *Sigismunds* superiors, did disallow it.

Simanch a Bishop of *Pacia*, that lying spirit, blushed not to affirme, in his *Catholique Institution* Cap. 46. Num. 52. That at no hand, faith was to bee kept towards Heretiques, no not vpon oath. And therefore it was iustly decreed; That against the tenor of the oath, *Husse* and *Ierome* of *Prage* were burned, and a Canon prouided; That an oath made towards an Heretique, was not to be regarded. And at last concludeth, That as warning thereof, ought often to bee giuen, so is it very necessary, that it be often re-iterated, and at no time to be silenced, as often as any mention of this peace is objected.

O! Why should I offend the chaste eares of any good Christian with such infernall stuffe? Smally hath he profited in the schoole of Gods word, that in his owne conscience is not able to decide controuersies, of much more cunning cariage, then any of these. In regard whereof, I will here cease, and affirme, *That in knowing of one, you know all*: such is their malice in seruice of the Romish sea, towards Emperor, Kings, Princes, and free States. Let him that hath a mind to bee further and fully satisfied, peruse the most excellent treatises printed this present yeere 1609.

Notes

For Conclusion vnto these plaine and pregnant presidents of Popish tyranny by time and vsurpation practised vpon the sacred Maiesties of mightie Princes, mine Authour, truly to aggrauate their immoderate pride, and further to encourage the aggreeued parties to hasten their *Reformation*, for warrantize out of diuers Authours, hee hath culled out many irresistable testimonies to prooue, *That Rome is Babylon, and the Bishop thereof Antichrist*. Which for that (in mine opinion) in few words they haue beene more liuelier represented vnto your consideratiue consciences, in his Maiesties most excellent Premotion, then which nothing can be spoken more fullie, truly, and indifferently, without spleene, or ambiguitie.

I will heere craue pardon to ouerpasse them, and in lieu thereof content you, with some few both theorique and practise notes, hatched vpon the same grounds, but practised vpon other states, of later daies in diuers parts of Christendome.

And first of their Iesuiticall Theoriques, thus collected into order, and eight times printed: as mine Authour affirmeth.

Regule Iuris Romani.

1. The Bishop of *Rome* hath in himselfe all manner of power, both spiritual & temporall: Authority to command, to forbid, to curse, & to excommunicate: a power of punishing, right of Election and conferring the lieutenancy of the Empire. Power, to create & depose magistrates, euē Emperors, Kings & Princes: so of al other Potentates, & their subiects. These aphorisms are to be receiued as an article of faith: He that alloweth not, or

A a

beleeueth

beleueth not so much, is to be reputed a most detestable Heretique.

2. On the contrary, all Ecclesiasticall persons, Bishops, Prelates, Priests, Monks, Nuns, and all their temporall goods, their priuiledges and estates, are vtterly exempted and freed from all obedience of temporall Lords, from their commands, contributions, and superiorities; and that aswell in personall and reall impleadings, as in ciuill and criminall actions. Neither are they bound to obey Emperour, King, or any Lay Magistrate. Yea *Cesar*, Kings and Princes, ought to instruct his fortresses rather to ecclesiasticall persons, then to Lay Captaines.

3. Albeit the Pope be a Man, yet for that he is Gods vicar on earth (a reason wherfore diuine honor is due to him) he can not erre in points concerning Christian doctrine; no although all other ecclesiasticall fathers, yea and the Councils themselues should fall into error. An argument, That from Councils we must appeale to the Pope; but not *e contra*, From the Pope, to the Council.

4. The Validity, interpretations, and power of inuoluing the sacred Scriptures, resteth in the bosome of the Pope: but his Holinesse decrees, as simply necessary to faith and saluation, are immutable, forcible, and obligatory.

5. The constitutions, Statutes, ordinances, parliaments, edicts, Confederacies, & al letters patents, of Emperours Kings, Princes, & other estates, which fauour any other religion, then the modern Roman ought to be reputed voide and of no force, no, although an oath be interposed.

The

6. The Edict of religion concluded by the general consent of the German Nation, is not obligatory; for that it was procured by force. That, it was granted, but to serue the time, as a Delay, or Toleration: viz. vntill the publication of the Councell of Trent, which followed in the yeere 1564.

7. That now the Romanists are to imploy their vtmost indeuours by fire, sword, poison, powder, warre, or any other engine, to suppress all heretiques, but especially the Lutherans and Caluinists, with their fautors and the politique catholiques, who had rather maintaine peace, then adioyne their forces to the Catholique side in extirpation of heresies.

8. *But this rule is not without exceptio*: If they haue cause to feare that the proiect be not likely to second imagination, or that danger or detriment be likely to arise thereof to the Catholique cause: In this case, some regard is to bee had to the time, and a better season to be expected. *Yet some are againe of opinion*: That time is not to be respected. *For what requitall shall a Iesuit returne to so benign a parent as the Pope, if hee stand tampering upon the safetie of his conscience, or the security of his life?* And therefore without any longer temporizing, it were better that in all places these Lutherans and Caluinists were speedily banished, suppressed, or vtterly rooted out; so that hereafter not so much as one seed may be left, to restore so much as the remembrance of their Religion.

9. As soon as the Roman-Catholique subjects in their Conciliables haue decreed, *That the Emperour, King or Prince vnder whom they serue, is to be accounted a Tyrant*: then is it lawfull for them to renounce him, and to

A a 2

hold

hold themselves free from their oath of allegiance. But if they be deemed to hold their *assemblies*; *Then is it granted vnto euery priuate subiect*, yea praise-worthie and meritorious, to murder such a King or Prince: but with prouiso, that hee proceede not before hee haue vsed the counsell of some *Iesuit*, or such like *Theologian*. Wherein, the Munke *James Clement*, who slew *Henry* the third with an inuenomed knife, made true vse of this Rule. And in those dayes, hee was adiudged to haue acted as meritorious an action, that should haue played the like part by his successour *Henry* the fourth.

10 If subiects haue a *Lutheran* or *Caluinist* to their King, or Prince, who induoreth to bring them into Heresies, (you must alwaies vnderstand what Heresies they meane) they are those subiects quitted of homage & fealty towards their soueraigne Masters. To whom it is lawfull and granted to renounce, murder or imprisonment such an anointed and high Magistrate.

11 That, Emperors, Kings & Princes may be poysoned by their vassals and seruants; in case the *Theologians*, or *Iesuits*, being learned and graue men, doe account them for tyrants: provided, that the concluded party to die, doe not amend, nor procure his owne voluntary destruction.

12 The Pope hath the free gift of all the kingdoms, principalities, and territories of all hereticall and infidel Princes: and such donations shall be firme and available to all constructions and purposes.

13 It is lawfull and granted to *Iesuits*, and all other *Catholicque Priests*, in case they happen to be examined before heretique Magistrates, to vse equiuocation,

tion, mental reseruatiō, false names, and counterfeit apparrell: the better to insinuate, and dispatch their treacheries.

14 That it is lawfull for *Iesuits*, and such like *Romanists* to equiuocate to the demaunds of Magistrates: And that as well by oath, as without. But this is to be vnderstoode, when the Respondent doth not account the Demaundant for a competent Iudge or Magistrate: Or when, the Respondent doth imagine, that the Iudge (though competent) hath no lawfull pretence of examination: Or when hee supposeth his Aduersarie, hath no iust cause of questioning him.

15 That such *Catholiques* are not bound to answer priuate *Catholiques* from the heart, and with conscience, but to equiuocate, and answer them with double meanings.

16 That this equiuocation is a profitable Arte, and good policy. Wherewith *Martin Azpilneta*, vnto whose doctrine *Gregory* the thirteenth gaue the attestation of *unanswerable* and *Holy*: And of whom the *Iesuit Horat. Tursellimus* in the life of *Lauerius* affirmeth, That hee was a man excellent for his honestie and learning, congratulath himselfe, and boasteth, that he commanded vnto a certaine great Prince the *Apothegme*; *Qui nescit dissimulare, nescit viuere*; Whereof the sayde Prince made afterwards great vse and profite.

These were the passions that troubled our forraigne Nouellists; In lieu of many, to auoid prolixity, now let vs proceed to examine at what marke, the *Romanists* on this side the sea doe also leuell. And *Saunders*,

for that hee will satisfie vs by Scripture; is traced by *Bellarmino*, and magnified by our aduersaries to be a man of most eminent learning, shall bee speaker for the whole factorie. But by the way you must note, that these had their priuate respects in their hearts, while they held their pens in their hands: So this our Country-man was not destitute of his priuate passion also, which was either an ouer-hard conceit against his deereft Soueraigne Queen *Elizabeth*, out of whose Kingdome hee was banished; or an ouer-weeing respect, deuoted vnto the seruice and gracious aspect of Pope *Pius* the first, vnto whom hee stood many wayes beholden. Otherwise your consciences would assure you, that he would neuer haue broached so manifest a lye. The worke whereat hee aymed, and the grieuan-ces which disquieted his penne, your discretions may iudge of, by reuoking to minde, the daies wherein hee liued, and the personage that then reigned. *Mutato nomine*, the positions (you know) as yet are as peremp- torily maintained, and therefore about the rest fittest to be spoken vnto.

With a liuely iuke to corroborat a bad matter, hee groundeth his first authority (his reasons & arguments as flowing from the bitterness of his priuate braine. I will ouer-passe) vpon the second booke of Cronicles the 26. Chapter, where we read;

For the more credit, you shall haue his owne words.

*Oziam regem, cum sacer-
dotum officium usurpauit,
& Pontificis fuisse de templo
eiectum. Et cum propter i-
dem peccatū, lepra a Deo per-
cussus fuisset, conuictum etiam*

That *Ozias* the King, when he vsurped vpon the office of the Priest-hood, was by the Priest cast out of the temple. And when, for the same sinne he was

*fuisse ex urbe discedere, &
regnum filio renunciare.*

*Quod non sponte sua, sed
ex sententia sacerdotis, vr-
be, & regni administratio-
ne priuatus fuerit, patet.
Nā legimus Leuit. 13. Qui-
cunque, inquit Lex, macu-
latus fuerit lepra, & sepe-
ratus est ad arbitrium sacerdo-
tis, solus habitabit extra ca-
stra.*

*Cum ergo, hac fuerit Lex
in Israel, & simul legimus
2. Paralip. 26. Regem habi-
tasse extra urbem in domo
solitaria; & filium eius in
urbe iudicasse populum ter-
ra; cogimur dicere, fuisse eū
ad arbitrium sacerdotis sepa-
ratum, & consequenter reg-
nandi autoritate priua-
tum.*

*Si ergo propter lepram
corporalem poterat sacerdos
oleum regem iudicare, & reg-
no priuare: quare id non po-
test modò propter lepram
spiritualem, id est, propter
hæresim, quæ per lepram fi-
gurabatur; ut August. do-
cet in questionibus Euan-
gelicis.*

stricken by God with lea-
prosie, he was constrained
to depart out of the City,
& to resigne the kingdom
to his sonne.

That not of his own ac-
cord, but by the sentence
of the high Priest, hee was
banished the City, and de-
priued of the gouernment
of the kingdome. It appea-
reth, *Leuit. 13.* whoſoeuer
(saith the Law) shall bee
touched with the leapro-
sie, and is seperated by the
iudgement of the Priest, he
shall dwell by himselfe
withour the tents.

Sithence then, this was
the Law in *Israel*: as also
that we read 2. Paralip. 26.
That the King dwelled
without the City in a soli-
tary Mansion; and that his
sonne iudged the people
of the land within the Ci-
ty: wee must of necessity
confesse, that hee was se-
questred by the iudgment
of the Priest, and conse-
quently depriued of all au-
thority of gouernment.

licis lib. 2. quest. 40. prefer- If then, in respect of cor-
tim cum 1. Cor. 10. Paulus porall leprosie, the Priest
dicat: Contigisse Iudeis om- of old might dispose of
nia in figuris. Hac ille. the King and dispossesse
 him of his kingdome.

Wherefore now may not the Pope doe the like, in
 case of spirituall leprosie, viz. for heresie, figured by Le-
 prosie, as saith *S. Augustin*, in his Euangelicall questi-
ons lib. 2. quest. 40. Especially when in the first to the
Cor. ca. 10. Paul saith: That all things were manifested
 vnto the Iewes in figures. Hitherto *Saunders*.

Take him at his word; and heere were learning e-
 nough to deceiue millions of soules: but examine him
 by his owne authority, and you shall find him in a mi-
 serable taking, vnlesse God be mercifull.

Lib. 5. cap. 11.

For to prooue it most false, *That Ozias was deprived*
of his regall Authority by the sole iudgement of the high
Priest: Nothing through the whole History of the
 Kings is more liuely expressed, then that *Ozias* from
 the sixteenth yeere of his age, when he began to raig-
 to the 60. yeere, wherein he died, was perpetuall King.
See the text. Neither was he at any time during his naturall life de-
 priued of his kingdome.

As Lewes the
eleventh in
France.

Without question he dwelled in an House apart:
 And in that respect, for the nature of his Disease, hee
 could not dispatch the office of a King, which is of
 fact. But that bereaued him not of the right of his
 kingdome, neither of his Kingly capacity; for so wee
 should deny, that Children being crowned (as in times
 past *Ioas* and *Ioshias* were) and men of full age (if they
 had fallen into irrecoverable sicknesses, either of
 mind, or body) to be Kings; sithence the one by no-
 nage,

nage, the other by sickness are necessarilie seque-
 stred from managing the State, which consisteth in a-
 ction.

2. But *Ozias* continued king as long as he liued. For
 the scripture saith: *In the seven and twentieth yeere of Je-* *2. King. 15.*
roboam king of Israel, raigned Azarias (called also Ozias, *2. Paral. 26.*
and Zacharias) the sonne of Amazias king of Iuda. Six-
teen yeere old was he, when he began to raigne, and he raig-
ned fifty two yeeres in Ierusalem.

Behold our Romanist here plainly detected of an
 vntrueth (as I promised gone before) and that by the
 truest testimony, that humane satisfaction can vnder
 the concaue of the heauens demand.

But to bewray the true *genius* of impudency, I will
 yet go farther, to his and his partakers finall confusion.
 Witnesse the *2. of Kings. v. 27.*

In the two and fiftieth yeere of Azarias King of
Iuda, Peka the sonne of Romeliah raigned ouer Is-
rael in Samaria. Heere is plaine dealing, and matter
 vpon record. How shall we here belecue this Roma-
 nist, when the spirit of trueth and Antiquity giueth vs
 assurance, that he continued King thirty six yeers after
 his Coronation.

To the further verifying wherof (if it were possible)
Iosephus recordeth in his 9. book of Antiquities, *cap. 11.*
 That *Azarias* (or *Ozias*) dyed in the sixty eight yeere
 of his age, and in the two and fiftieth yeere of his raigne:
 which being most true, that he began his raigne at six-
 teen yeeres, and dyed at sixty eight, what testimony is
 objected in the course of his life, whereby we may ga-
 ther that he was either deposedor deprived from his le-
 gall inheritance? That during the time of his visitation,
 B b his

his sonne was but his deputy, we will prooue anon directly, as it is accustomed to be done vnto them, who in like cases are not able to attend their affaires themselves. For no lesse doth the same Text auerre: *Ioatham the Kings Sonne was Ouer-seer of the Kings Pallace, and gouerned the Kings House, and iudged the people of the Land.*

Here obserue, that *Ioatham* is stiled but the Kings sonne in the life time, and sicknesse of his father; *Gouernour of the Court*, and as I may properly speake, *Lord steward of his Fathers house*. And why did hee sit in iudgement amongst the people? because their complaints could not with conueniency be brought vnto the kings iudicature, by reason of his infirmity, and his separation thereupon by the *prescript commaundement of Gods Law. Leuit. 13.*

3. For confirmation of which last point, heare what the Text sayth: *And Ozias slept with his Fathers, and they buried him in the field of the Regall Sepulchres, because he was a leaper. And Ioatham his sonne raigned in his stead.*

Here again obserue, how plainly the scripture leadeth vs in the way of truth: Euen now, It termes *Ioatham* the Kings sonne, the kings steward, or seruant: But now, after the decease of his father (and not before) It saith: *Regnare capit: He began to raigne.*

Yet *Ozias* was separated by the commaund of the high Priest: True: but that was also commaunded by the liuely voice of the Diuine Law: But that he was deposed or depriued from his legall inheritance, his kingly authority, or inforced to resigne his estate to his sonne before his death: No man will auouch it, vnlesse a bloody

bloody and passionate Romanist. The simple know, that Soueraignty and Gouvernement are of no lesse difference then *proprietas and possession*, or as I may speake, an estate determinable, and an estate in Fee. Soueraignty is alwaies incorporated vnto the person of the King, is as it were the soule of a kingdome, and inseparable from the right thereto: But Gouvernement, Lieutenancy, or procuration may bee diuested vpon deputies. As in the nonage of kings; or in times of daungerous sicknesses, those who are assigned to take care of the waighty affaires of the kingdome, are stiled Deputies, Protectors, Tutors, Lieutenants, Viceroyes, or Gouernors, neither propounding, dispatching, nor negotiating any publique businesse in their owne names, but vnder the stile and seale of the yong, or discafed Soueraigne.

His second authority is taken from the second of *Chronicles* the 23: Chapter, which because in truth it is but impertinent, though most maliciously framed; I will recite in our vulgar tongue only.

At what time Athalia gouerned the kingdome by tyranny, and maintained the worship of Baal, Ioada the High Priest called vnto him the Centurions and souldiers, and commaunded them to slay Athalia, And in her stead they crowned Ioas king.

That the Priest perswaded not, but commanded, it is apparant by those words in the fourth of Kings, and eleuenth Chapter. And the men of warre did according vnto all that Ioada the High priest commanded them. Again by those in the second of Chronicles the three and twentieth Chapter. But Ioada the high Priest going out vnto the

Centurions & leaders of the Army, said unto them; Bring her forth (*Athalia the Queene*) from the precinct of the Temple, and let her be slaine without by the sword.

That the cause of the deposition and killing of *Athalia*, was not onely her tyrannie; but also her maintenance of the worship of *Baal*; It is proued by the words immediately placed after her slaughter. whereupon, saith the Scripture, All the people entred into the house of *Baal*, and destroyed it, and broke downe the Altars and the images thereof. They also slew *Mathan the Priest* of *Baal* before the Altar.

That this example of *Ioadas* and *Athalia*, do nothing concerne the marke, whereat they so preposterously and maliciously leuel: or the moderne controuersie of Papal intrusion ouer Kings and Princes, we wil resoluely you forthwith.

For the Example of *Athalia*, is of a party, who vsurped vpon a Kingdome without any lawfull pretension, saue meere and barbarous tyrannie; by force, by wickednesse, and the cruell murder of the royall Progenie. In which case, the President was so abominable, that euen without the commandement of *Ioadas*, it might haue beene lawfull for euery priuate Magistrate to haue iustified her death: but for that such a designment seemed dangerous and difficult to be executed vpon her, who was mother to the deceased King *Ahaziah*; therefore was it needfull to haue vsed the counsell and assistance of *Ioadas the high Priest*. Or at least, of some such eminent person, who for the Honour of his place, or the reputation of vprightnesse, was of power to assemble and stirre vp the souldiers and people to so iustificable an action.

But

But that the Act was executed as well by persuasion as command; It appeareth by that which was spoken: *Ioadas the high Priest* sent, and tooke the Centurions and men of warre vnto him, and caused them to come into the Temple; *Pepigitque cum eis fædus*: And he couenanted with them. Now I hope that so absolute a Commander, as our Romanists will make this high Priest to be, would haue scorned to haue capitulated, if hee could haue commanded. Besides, the words, *we will*, or *command*, are accustomedly vsed by those, who in faction, or in any other publique businesse obtaine the prime-place of imployment.

What then may be found in this example to inforce *Ioadas*, or the Popes omnipotency, for innouation of States or Kingdoms? What is brought to proue so dangerous an assertion. This is a true president to be inforced against a Tirannesse or an vsurper. But there is a great dissimilitude betweene legal Lords, or true proprietaries, and theeues; or the inuaders of another mans possession.

If there were any cause besides tyrannie, materiall to depose, or sleie *Athalia*, what is that to vs. Let it be inforced against people guilty of like offences, viz. those that worship, and defend the worship of *Baal*, and the hoast of Heauen. It is sufficient, that shee was a Tirannesse, and an iniurious Vsurper vpon another mans Kingdome; without that, that vpon her part there remained any obstacle, or impediment of Lawe, but that shee might bee deposed from her throne, and slaine. The like whereof, I hope, no good Christian will affirme concerning any lawfull King; whose sacred person (although bleimished by many

Bb 3

humane

humane infirmities) the *Right of Inheritance*, the *Majestie* of his *Place*, and the *capacity* of his *calling*, ought alwaies, and that for conscience sake, to protect & defend from iniurie, infamie, and humane controlement. To which, let all true Christians say, *Amen*.

Now to their praëctique.

NOW that I haue epitomized vnto your considerations the theorems, rules, and policies of this enforced vsurpation: I will also make manifest vnto you by true booke cases, how they haue practised vpon these *Theorems*, throughout all the kingdoms of Christendome.

*Spaine. 1568.
Chro. Belg.*

In *Spaine*, vpon suspition of *heresie*, they so overawed the conscience of *Philip* the second, that they caused the vncompassionate father, in a bath to open the veines of *Charles* his eldest sonne, a Prince of admirable expectation; there to bleede out his deereft life. Now to explaine vnto you, what *heresie* this noble yong Prince had committed, let me report vnto you (if *fame* say truth) that it arose forsooth vpon his hard visage towards the Clergie; In dismounting them riding vpon their pleasures, from their excellent Ienets and stately Mules; and sending them home to their studies; bestowing these beasts vpon some of his more worthy followers. Or peradventure vpon ielousie, that manifesting too much of the Grandfathers spirit, in future times, *He* might call *them* to account, as did *Charles* the fifth. *Herman* once Archbishop of *Colein*,

to

to say for himselfe what he could, against the accusations libelled against *Him*, by his Clergie, and the Vniuersitie. I assure you, farre lesse sinnes, then these, are able to cast the best man liuing into the bottomlesse pit of their *horie* Inquisition, *Vnde nulla redemptio*.

Who were of Councell vnto *Sebastian*, the last of house of *Portugal*, to vndertake that wofull, but as they termed it, that most meritorious iourney into *Africa*? *Portugal. 1578. Chro. Belg.*
To vnderstand the true motiues whereof, I will say no more, but referre you ouer to the Iesuits *Cata. fo. 709*.

Who but the same brood of Iesuits. made away *Iohn* of *Albret*, Queene Dowager of *Nauarre*, the very *France. 1572. Hist. Gal.*
eye of the *French* Protestants, by impoisoned Pills; which an *Italian*, the Kings Apothecary at *Paris*, prepared for her?

Who but the brokers of such impieties, were the instruments of that most infernall resolution; vnder the colour of so solemne and Prince-like a marriage, to contriue the death of the *Nauarrois*; and the massacre of so many braue Princes and Gentlemen, of the Religion through the whole territories of *Fraunce*; And that without any regard or touch of conscience, in abusing and violating the oath of safe conduct, religiously sworn vnto, by the King himselfe. *Anno. 1572. Hist. Gal.*

By what sort of men, I pray you, was *Peter Barr*. *Anno. 1589. Chro. Belg.*
furnished, and obliged by Sacrament, trayterously to haue murdered *Henry* the fourth? And by whom, let me aske you, is the Auditory at this day admonished, but to make vse of some small patience, For within few dayes, God himselfe is to make his personall appearance amongst vs, to worke I know not what, miracles, to the confusion of Heretiques.

Was.

Anno. 1594.
Cat. Ies. 482.
Chro. Belg.

Was not *Iohn Chastelius*, a yong man of nineteene yeers of age, and a nouice in *Claremount* Colledge, fully satisfied, thinke you, by the resolutions and incouragements of these persons, and vpon the foresaid positions; before he would hazard his portion in heauen, to vndertake the slaughter of the said king of *France & Navar.* ? But as God would, he missed his throat, & by the wauering of his hand, strooke out but one of his teeth: affirming that he was but, as another *Ehud*, apointed to murder *Eglon* the wicked king of the *Moabites*.

Eug. 1588.
1594. 1597.
Cat. Ies. 436.
☉ 448.

By whome were so many and so often treacheries plotted not only to haue beene executed by strangers against *Queene Elizabeth*, but also by her owne seruants, namely *Parry, Squier, Lopez, Yorke, Williams*, and *Patrike Cullen*: By whome was her sacred Maiesty excommunicated, her peace disturbed, her subiects assailed, her Realme betrayed, and her life set at sale to bee taken away by any meanes; by poyson, by masseue rewards, or any other kind of violence what euer? I will not stand to dilate hereupon. The world I hope is againe and againe satisfied with the prooffe hereof. It yet freshly remembreth, what ouertures were made, euen but yesterday, and by whome, vnto the Spanish king for a second Inuasion. And as yet, *Calum, non animum mutant, qui trans mare currunt.*

Anno. 1607.

For, it is as cleere as day, that none but men moulded and sold ouer to the worst of wickednesse, would euer haue imagined or consented to haue blowen vp a State-house; And that vpon the first day, and first sitting, when in certaintie they knew, that of necessity the King and Prince would be present, the assembly fullest, and the massacre bloodiest.

Who

Who were the instruments, that *Sigismund K. of Polonia* and *Sweland* after the death of his father returned into *Sweland*, there against the tenor of his oath, to root out the Lutheran Religion as they terme it? who were the authors of the vnseasonable commotions in *Liuonia*? who accounselled him by surprise to inuade the kingdome, and almost to haue lost his life, as he hath now at last the kingdome? And by whose seducements hath hee attempted so many innouations in *Polonia*?

Sweland.
1593.

Or Pol. b. 4.
Pref. cat. Ies.

Polon.

To what shall we attribute, but to their dangerous instigations, that *Demetrius* beeing returned out of *Poland* into *Mosconie*, in attempting to alter the receiued Religion of the *Moscouits*, was himself in one day depriued of life and Empire, with an infinit number of his nobles and followers?

Mosconia.

Whom should we accuse, but these furies, for the murder of the worthy Prince of *Orange*, shot to death by *Balthasar Gonhard*, before prepared for blood by the assurance of these cunning *Garnets*?

Netherland.

What should I dull your eares with these vnpleasant discourfes? If you list, your selues may reade at leysure the examinations of *Peter de Pennes*, *Michael Renicher*, and *Peter de Four*, against the life of *Graue Maurice*, the aforesaid Prince his Son, for maintaining the cause of Religion?

I could also, bring you presidents from *Transilvania* 1607. from *Bohemia*, 1608. from *Austria* 1609. *Bauaria*, 1592. *Argentina* 1698. *Aquisgran*, 1607. *Donauer dand Venice* 1606. but that I am very vnwilling to tire your patience with the desperate resolutions of these irregular and faithlesse men. Faithlesse to God: for they vow

C c

Religion

religion and humility, but worke treachery and affect superiority. And irregular amongst men, for they preach faith, and administer oathes; and yet if any thing displease them, they send foules to desperation, and make port-sale of periury. And therefore to conclude, I will for your perpetuall remembrance, in the person of one, describe the very *genius* of the whole fraternity in these short remembrances following.

*Seducer Sweco: Gallo Sicarius: Anglo
Proditor: Imperio Explorator: Daurus Ibero:
Italo Adulator: Dixi teres ore suitam.*

*He that hath oft the Sweth-land-Pole seduced:
Murdered the French: And Englands-King abused:
A spie for Austria: A cunning knave for Spaine,
And sooths th' Italian States to Popish gaine;
Is All one Man, and Iesuit is his name.*

*And what yee read of Henry, Frederick,
Of Otho Great: and their Succession.
Gainst ^a Philip Faire, and the ^b twelfe Lodowic,
French Kings: Gainst ^c Henry th' eight of Albion,
And his diuine child ^d Eliza Queene:
With many more of Nations far and wide,
Be bold to say: Like measure to haue beene
In high proportion meated from That side.*

^a By Boniface
the eight.

^b By Iulius the
second.

^c By Clement
the seventh and
Paul the third.

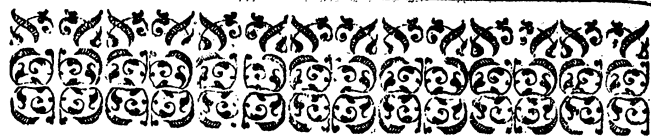
^d By Pius the
fift.

THE

The Tables to this Booke: The first declaring how
*many Emperors haue beene either Excommunicated,
or constrained to kisse his Holiness Feete.*

Emper- ours	Otho the fourth.	Excom- muni- cated by	Innocent the third.
	Henry the fourth.		Gregoric the 7.
	Henry the fift.		Paschal the second.
	Frederick the first		Adrian the fift.
	Philip the sonne of Frederick.		Alexander the 3.
	Frederick the second.		Innocent the third thrice by Gre. the 9.
	Conradus the fourth		Innocent the fourth
	Lodowick the Bawa- rian.		John the 22. Bene- dict the 12. and Cle- ment the V I.

Emper- ours	Charles the Great.	Con- strained to kisse the feet of	Adrian the Pope.
	Iustinian Emperor of Constantinople.		Stephen the second.
	Luit Prandus king of Lomb.		John the xvij.
	Crescentius Consul.		John the xvij.
	&c.		Alexander the third agroose, &c.
	Otho the first.		Paschal the second.
	Frederick the first.		Of Martin the fift, and Eugenius the fourth.
	Henry the fift.		Of Clement the se- uenth.
	Sigismund.		
	Charles the fift.		



The second, deuided into Sections;
seuerally epitomizing the liues of the
 Popes, with the vices whereunto euery one
 hath in particular beene addicted,
viz. who haue beene,

- | | |
|-----------------------------------|-------------------------------|
| 1 <i>Atheists.</i> | 11 <i>Whoremasters.</i> |
| 2 <i>Arrians.</i> | 12 <i>Adulterers.</i> |
| 3 <i>Magitians or Coniurers.</i> | 13 <i>Incestuous persons.</i> |
| 4 <i>Blasphemers.</i> | 14 <i>Sodomites.</i> |
| 5 <i>For swearers and equiuo-</i> | 15 <i>Pandars.</i> |
| <i>cators.</i> | 16 <i>Bawdes.</i> |
| 6 <i>Turkish Pentioners.</i> | 17 <i>Bastards.</i> |
| 7 <i>Mad-men and tyrants.</i> | 18 <i>Drunkards.</i> |
| 8 <i>Warriours and bloud-suc-</i> | 19 <i>Couetous persons.</i> |
| <i>cours.</i> | 20 <i>Church-robbers.</i> |
| 9 <i>Traytours and mouers of</i> | 21 <i>Simonianists.</i> |
| <i>seditions.</i> | 22 <i>Ambitious persons.</i> |
| 10 <i>Parricides and imploy-</i> | 23 <i>Monsters.</i> |
| <i>ners.</i> | 24 <i>Vnlearned persons.</i> |



Lines of the Popes.

1. *Atheists.*

Eo the tenth: who hearing Cardinall Bembo speaking to a point concerning, *The ioyfull message of our Lord*, answered most dissolutely; *It is well known to the world through all ages, in how great stead that fable of Christ hath profited vs and our associates.* This man neither beleued heauen, nor hell, after our departure out of this life.

And such were *Alexander the tenth, Silvester the second, Paul the third, Benedict the nineteenth, John the thirteenth, Clement the seuenth, & Gregory the seuenth.*

2. *Arrians.*

Anastasius, the eleuenth: Liberius and Felix.

3. *Magitians and Coniurers.*

Alexander the sixth: this man made a league with the diuell, vpon promise to procure him the Papacie.

Paul the 3. obtained the garland in Astrology, and in that kind of speculation, which is assisted by the ministry of diuels. He altogether kept familiar acquaintance

with Negromancers, & such like notable impostures, and starre-gazers, to learne the faults of himselfe and his children.

Silvester the second, as well seene in these diabolical Arts, as his Predecessors, gaue himselfe wholly to the diuell, vpon condition to aduance him to the Papacie.

Benedict the ninth, obtained the same sea by charms, spels & enchantments. Before his instalment, in company of his associates, in woods and remote places he was accustomed to inuoke euill spirits, and by Negromantike toyes to worke women to his filthy lust.

John the thirteenth, at dice would call vpon the diuell, and in merriment carouse a cup of wine to his diuells.

Of *Clement* the seuenth, we read that he was a Geomantique and Simonianist.

Gregory the seienth, laboured the Papacie by the same Arts. He was the first that euer presumed to excommunicate an Emperour. And that was *Henry* the fourth, vnto the end of whose legend, if you please, you may with pleasure and to good purpose add these true and vncontrolable records.

With the forme of his Outlary vpon earth, we will not trouble you; but with his impudent presumption in banishing his soule from heauen (a place wherein I feare) such persons haue smallest interest, *ad perpetuam rei memoriam*, I will not faile to informe you. Then thus.

Agite igitur Apostolorum sanctissimi Principes, & quod dixi vestra autoritate

Courage then ye most chosen Princes of the Apostles: And what I haue

interposita, confirmate, ut omnes nunc demum intelligat, si potestis in celo ligare & soluere, in terra quoque imperia regna, principatus, & quicquid habere mortales possunt, auferre & dare vos posse. Ediscant nunc Reges huius exemplo, & omnes seculi principes, quid in celo possitis, quantig, apud Deum sitis, ac deinceps timeant sancte Ecclesie mandata contemnere. Hoc autem iudicium cito in Henricum exercete, ut intelligant omnes, iniquitatis solum non fortuito, sed vestra opera è regno cadere. Hos tamen à vobis optauerim, ut penitentia ductus, in die iudicii vestro rogatu, gratiam à Domino consequatur. Actum Roma Nonis Martij; indictione tertia.

thundered by the deputation of your authorities; ratifie I beseech you; that now at last all people may vnderstand, that as ye are of power in heauen to binde and to loose: so likewise that you are of no lesse potencie on earth, to giue and to take Empires, Kingdomes and Honors, with whatsoeuer the inhabitants of this world may peculiarly challenge. By the example of this man let Kings and Princes of the earth now learn, what are your prerogatiues in heauen, & what your credits with God, that henceforth they may feare to contempe the awards of Holy Church. Execute I beseech you, this sentence with speede vpon *Henry*, that all the world may perceiue, that this sonne of iniquity was disinthronized by your operation, and not by destinie. Yet thus much I request of your clemencies, that after repentance, in the day of iudgement, he may obtaine pardon of our Lord at your intercession. Giuen at *Rome* the Nones of March the third indiction.

To

to the rarenesse and nouelty of which president, (to auoid exception) and to confound such quarrelsome spirits, let them heare, what the wisdom of that vpright Bishop *Frisingensis*, a man for discent, zeale and learning most eminent, reporteth: and the rather for that he was almost an eie-witnesse vnto those times.

Lego & relego (saith he) *Ro-* I read and read againe the
manorum regum & Impe- Chronicles of the Roman
ratorum gesta, & nusquam kings and Emperors, and
inuenio quemquam eorum in no age can find that e-
ante hunc a Romano Ponti- uer a Romane Bishop ex-
fice Excommunicatum vel communicated or depri-
regno priuatum. ued any one of them from
his kingdome before this man: meaning Hildebrand.

And again in his first book of the gests of *Frederick: Gregorius septimus* (saith hee) *qui tunc urbis Ro-* Gregory the seauenth saith
me Pontificatum tenebat, he, at that time Pope of
eundem Imperatorem tan- Rome resolved to finite
quam a suis destitutum, ana- with the sword of Ex-
thematis gladio ferendum communication the fore-
decernit. Cuius rei nouitate said Emperor as forsaken
eo vehementius indignati- of his people. At the no-
one motum suscepit Imperi- uelty whereof the Empire
um, quò nunquam ante hac was so much the rather
tempora huiusmodi senten- mooued with indignati-
tiam in Principem Roma- on, for that before those
orum promulgatam cog- times, it neuer had known
nouerat. such a sentence to haue
been pronounced against
the Prince of the Romans.

Now with what sequell this *Hildebrand* striued ma-
steries to arrogate this temporal authority from *Henry*
the

the fourth. *Otto Frisingensis* also (whom *Bellarmino*, not vnderstanding, for his parentage, his learning and integrity of life, tearmeth *Most noble*) doth relate vnto you.

But what mischiefs, what warres, what hazarding of battailes followed hereupon? How often was miserable Rome besieged, taken, and sacked? It grieueth mee to record how a Pope was set up against a Pope, a King against a King. Finally the turmoyle of this tempestuous season produced so many miseries, so many schismes, so many shipwracks of soules and bodies, that those times onely, what by the massacres of persecution, and what by the perpetuity of mischiefs, gaue sufficient arguments to approoue the infelicity of humane misery. So that, those daies were compared by a certaine ecclesiasticall writer to the palpable and darke mists of Ægypt. For the foresaid Bishop Gregory was inforced from the Regall City, and Gibert of Rauenna was thrust into his place.

Hereunto, saith one of the tender hearted Romanists, that it mought be that *Gregory* did this vpon a good intension of the heart, let God iudge; but it can not be defended, that he did it iustly, discreetly, or by warrant of his calling; but that he erred foully following the humours and counsels of men, in arrogating that vnto himselfe which was none of his due. Where by the way our aduersaries may learne in auoiding of shedding of Christian blood, that notwithstanding all the Pope could do by his excommunications, and curses, for fise and twenty yeeres space, a great faction of the Clergy and Laytie sided with the Emperour, so that *Gregories* oversight could be no small fault, in that he called not into his consideration; *That it was the office of so eminent a pastor to haue studied all the points of christianity*

stianity, peace and humility, by suffering the faults of one man rather to escape unpunished, then to have engaged the innocent and harmelesse people through his priuate desire of reuenge, in an Ocean of misfortunes.

For it is manifest that all which we go about in the seruour of zeale, and to good intents, is not alwayes done to good purpose. *Moses* in zeale to his countryman slew the Egyptian, yet he sinned. *Oza* in zeale to vphold the Arke of God touched it, and dyed. *Peter* in zeale to our Lord and his master stroke off *Malchas* his eare, and yet he was blamed. An inconsiderate zeale doth oftentimes produce mischief and inconuenience.

*Lib. 3. cap. 2.
cont. ep. parmenian.*

In regard whereof, he ought not to haue excommunicated the Emperour, in participation of whose offence such multitudes of Christian soules were interessed, that without apparant schisme, and disunion of vnity in the Church and common weale, it could not be remedied. This is but the same Councell which for many Ages past, that great light of the Church *S. Augustine* did religiously and aduisedly admonish vs of, and prooued the warrant thereof out of the writings of *S. Paul*. Whose opinion the Church from thenceforth held so forceable, reasonable, and acceptable, that it vouchsafed to auouch it in warrant of their Canons.

*Can. Non potest.
23. q. 4.*

For confirmation whereof let vs take notice how *Hildebrand* behaued himselfe after the feeling-smart of these monstrous miseries, by his troubled conscience, and the testimony of antiquity, with reiection of bare assertions, and cauills of *dubie fidei*.

*In Cronogaph.
Anno. 1085.*

Pope *Hildebrand* (saith our Authour) *alias Gregorie* the seuenth, died in banishment at *Salerno*. Of this man I find it thus recorded. *Volumus vos scire, &c. We will that*

that you who are to be carefull ouer the Ecclesiasticall flocke, take notice, that our Apostolicall Lord Hildebrand (called also Gregory) now vpon the point of death, called vnto him one of the twelue Cardinalls, whom hee best loued. And he confessed to God, to Saint Peter, and before the whole Church, that he had greenously sinned in his pastorall Office, committed vnto his charge to gouerne; and that by the perswasion of the diuell hee had raised greate wrath and hatred amongst the sonnes of Men. Then at last he sent his foresaide Confessor vnto the Emperour and the vniuersall Church, that they would deigne to innocate his pardon, for that he perceined that his end drew nigh. And presentlie he put on the Angelicall vestment, and released and reuersed vnto the Emperour, and all Christian people aliue and dead, Clarkes and Laie, the Censures of all his Curses. And commanded all his followers to depart from the house of Deodoricus, and the Emperours friends to aproach.

Such were *John* the nineteenth twentieth, and one & twentieth. *Sergius* the fourth. *Benedict* the eight. *Silvester* the third. *Gregory* the sixt. *Clement* the second. *Damasus* the second. *Leo* the ninth. *Victor* the second. *Stephanus* the ninth. *Benedict* the tenth. *Nicholas* the second. *Alexander* the second. For from *Silvester* the second to the time of that most infamous impostor *Gregorie* the seuenth. All the Roman Bishops applied those studies, and therein far excelled the Ægyptian sorcerers.

*Sig. In Cronogaph. Anno.
1085.*

4. Blasphemers.

LEO the tenth of whom before.

Julius the third. This man made it his common exercise to reason in contempt of the Deity. Was

D d 2

espe

especially delighted in the flesh of Pork and Peacocks: But when the Physitian admonished him to refraine from Hogges-flesh, for that it was an enemie to the gowty disease, wherewith his Holinesse was at that time afflicted, and neuerthelesse would not abstaine. His Physitian, I say, forbad his Steward to serue vp any more Porke. Which when his Holinesse obserued, he demaunded for his dish. His Steward made answere, that his Physitian had forbad it. The Bishop replied, *Al dispetto didio*, bring me my Pork.

Againe, when at dinner time, hee had espied a Peacock, which was not toucht. *Keepe me* (quoth he) *this seruice colde for my supper, and let it be ready by an houre; for I meane to inuite certaine guests*. But at supper perceiving many hote smoaking Peacocks, but missing his colde one; all pale with anger hee belched out most horrible blasphemy against the diuine Maiesty. Which when one of the guest-Cardinals obserued; *Let not your Holinesse* (quoth he) *be so angry for so small a trifle*. Whereto *Iulius* replied: *If God were so farre forth angry about an Apple, that therefore he spared not to cast our first Parents out of Paradise, shall it not be lawfull for me (his Vicar) to be offended for being coufoned of my Peacock, sithence a Peacock is of more worth then many Apples*.

5. For swearers and equiuocators.

THE Papal Canons doe teach, that the Romane Bishop, may absolue frō oaths, dispense with vowes, and release a periured person. Whereupon, it is not to be wondred at, to finde so many periured and faithlesse Papists, swarming in euery corner of the world.

The Council of *Constance* ouer-awed the Emperor
Sigis-

Sigismond (to the violation of his oath) to deale with *John Hus*; according to the fore-said Canon, & by that law to burne him: *ut supra*.

Gregory the thirteenth, by the *Breue* wrote vnto the Papists of *England*, that *Rebus sic stantibus*, they might yeeld their obedience to the Queene. Which intimateth nothing else; but that for the present they may sweare, and vpon occasion dally with their oathes as them best seemeth.

Iulius the second, according to the testimony of *Guicciardine* in his eight book, maintained, That the Romish Bishop might violate his pleighted faith. And this *Maxime* he taught as well by example, as manner of life. For he not onely by falsifying his faith, coufoned the Cardinals of a huge masse of treasure, but also by the treachery and equiuocation, ingaged the *French* and *Venetians* in manifold incumbrances.

Siluerius, against his oath of allegiance sworne vnto the Emperour, did his best to betray the City to the *Goths*.

Gregory the second, hauing forgotten his oath giuen vnto the Emperour, caused *Italy* to reuolt, and confederated with his enemies.

Gregory the seuenth, in a moment forgot what hee had religiously promised and sworne to effect.

Pascal the second, after a peace sworn with the Emperour in special & precise termes, as soone as his Pope-ship had leuied his forces, he charged his Maiesty.

Formosus, by breaking his oath, caused most cruell tragedies.

Alexander the sixth, for his false faith (more infamous then Punique) was most renowned.

Leo the tenth, against his sworne promise, banished the house of *Ruver* out of the Dutchy of *Vrban*.

Clement the seuenth, had small regard of his faith.

Paul the fourth, and *Pius* the fifth, excommunicated the English, for not reuolting from their oathes of allegiance.

Gregory the fourteenth, threatens that he would doe the like against the subiects of *France*.

Remember the battell of *Varna*.

6. Turkish Pensioners.

Clement the sixth, was euermore very carefull, to keepe the Christian Princes at iarres, so that they could neuer intend to prepare their mindes to thinke vpon the Turk.

Alexander the sixth, being willing to make good his supremacy, called in the *Turk* to assist him against the King of *Erance*.

Alexander the third, betrayed *Frederick* to the *Sultan*.

Gregory the ninth, by his letters requested the *Soldan*, not to make restitution of the Holy land, but rather to slay the Emperour, then warring in the Easterne parts.

7. Mad-men and Tyrants.

John the thirteenth, put out the eies of some of his Cardinals; some he deprived of their tongues; some of their fingers, hands, noses and priuities.

Boniface the seuenth, by an ambush tooke *John* the fif-

fifteenth prisoner; put out his eies; committed him to prison, starued him, and so became Master of the Pope-dome.

Paschal the second, excommunicated *Henry* the fourth, being a most religious Prince: prouoked the Sonne to rise in armes against the Father. And to put no period to his hellish Nature, so infinite was his rage towards the dead carcassee, that he commanded it to be digged vp, to be cast out of the Church, and to want Christian buriall by the terme of five yeares.

Histories record, that *Nicholas* the third was priuy, nay, author of that *Sicilian* massacre, from whence sprung the prouerb: *vespera sicula*.

John the fourteenth: This man deliuered vnto the Hang-man, one *Peter* the Præfect of *Rome*: Who stripping him to the skinne, and shauing his beard, by his fatherhoods commandement, tied him vnto a Gallowes for a whole dayes space by the haire of the head. Then setting him on an Asse, with his face reuerfed, and his hands fastened vnto the beasts taile, hee commanded him so to be shewed in spectacle round about the Citie; To be scourged, and afterwards banished into *Germanie*.

Gregory the ninth, his fury against the Emperour was vnappeaseable, and would as farre as in him lay, haue vtterly confounded him.

Vrban the sixth, vpon a creation of nine new Cardinals, cast seuen of the olde into prison; sewed siue in sacks, and cast them into the sea.

Boniface the eighth: such (in partiality of his owne faction) was the vnquenchable flame of his rancour towards the *Gibellins*, that vpon report, how some of the

fide

side had seated themselves at *Genoa*; himselfe made hast to the place, finally to haue destroyed them, and rooted out their race from the memory of Man. Vpon *Ashwednesday* being according vnto custome to minister *Ashes* vnto the people, the Bishop of the place (whom he knew to be a *Gibelline*) approached him, & vpon his knees desired his *Benediction*. Vnto whom his Holiness (notwithstanding the reuerence of the place, the frequency of the people, and his religious calling) where he should haue sprinkled the *Ashes* vpon his bald pate, he cast them wholly into his eyes: Saying: *Remember man that thou art a Gibelline, and with the Gibellines thou shalt be turned into Ashes.*

Innocent the 7. This man tooke such delight in gouerning his affaires with tumult and disorder, that when the *Romane* Citizens desired him to restore vnto them their auncient priuiledges; to surrender the *Capitol*; to put an end to the *Schisme*; to finish the warres, and to bury all memory of seditions. Hee in shew of friendship requested the petitioners to attend his Resolue at his Nephew *Lodowicks* house (as good had they beene to haue gone to the hang man) then dwelling in the Hospitall of *S. Eskerit*. For forthwith he murdered eleuen of them, and cast their dead bodies out at the windowes, saying: *That by any other counsell it was not possible to finish the warre and the Schisme.*

Innocent the fourth. As full of fanaticall frensie, accursed *Fredericke*; depriued him of all Imperiall dignity; absolued his people from their oaths of obedience; insinuated with them to choose another: and to further his vile purposes, deuised infinit scandals to worke the Commons.

Clement

Clement the sixt that vnmanerly presbyter, rather then he would giue ouer his furious and selfe-wild intendments against the sacred maiesty of an annointed Emperor, fastned his libells vpon euery Church dore. Protesting that vnlesse his maiesty would within three daies take order to satisfie his pleasure, he would impose vpon him his most grieuous censures. Against what poore groome could he proceed more basely?

Stephanus the sixt. Such was his malice against the name of *Formosus*, that presently he abrogated his decrees; frustrated his acts, and continuated his rage so far forth against the dead Bishop, that calling a Synod he caused the body to be digged vp, to be disrobed of all Episcopall habit, and clothed in secular raiment, to be deliuered to lay buriall: From his right hand he cut off two of his fingers, and cast them into *Tiber*.

Sergius the third. This man after eight yecres rest, caused the body of the said *Formosus* again to be digged vp: to be placed vpon a papall seig, & to be araigned & condemned to capitall punishment, as if he had beene liuing. From the foresaide hand he caused the other three fingers to be chopt off, and together with the remainder of his body to be throwne into the Riuer, as vnworthy of common buriall. He condemned all his actions, so that they who by him had bin admitted vnto his holy orders, were again faine to be readmitted by his present Popeship.

8. Warriors and Bloodsuckers.

Innocent the second after his installment, accounted it his holiest proiect to season his New and high calling with the destruction of *Roger* Duke of *Sicil*. Whereupon he flyeth to Armes, marshalleth his forces,

E c

ces,

ces, and speedily vanquisheth. But by the vnexpected comming in of *Roger* his sonne, his Popeship is taken, and his Cardinals made prisoners.

Julius the second, in seauen yeeres space was the cause of the slaughter of two hundred thousand Christian soules. He limited a reward to any man that could kill a Frenchman. Marching out of the City accoutred with *Pauls* sword, and other such holy Furniture, to fight against the French and the confederate Princes: He vnheathed the blade, and cast the Keyes into *Tiber* saying: *Sithence Peters keies can no longer stand vs, welcome the sword of good S. Paul.*

Gregory the ninth, receiuing newes of the recouery of *Ierusalem*, caused the Emperors Embassadors to be murdered.

Clement the sixt to effectuate his proper desseignes, from time to time sowed occasions of warre & discord amongst the Christian Princes: and rather then to faile of his purposes, hee would not spare to set them on working by massiue promises, by entertainment, by trecheries and many cunning deuises.

Clement the fourth without either formall proceeding or obiection of reason, consented that the Noble Emperour *Conradus*, the last of the house of *Swenia*, should be publickly beheaded.

Sixtus the fourth managed many wars, and was the author of the *Pactian* league, wherein *Julian de Medices* and many other gentlemen miserably miscaried.

Innocent the third persecuted *Cesar Philip*. And is reported to haue boasted: *That either the Pope should take the Diadem from Philip, or Philip the Apostolike Miter from Innocent.*

Paul

Paul the third was prepared for great Innouations to be practised against the saints of God. For he raised the German warre. Like vnto him was *Alexander* the sixt, whome the Papists affirme to bee most cruell. Of whom they vulgarly repeated these verses.

*If after death Borgia did spue vp blood,
Wonder t'is none: For his cold stomack could
Not well digest so great an ingorg'd flood.*

Onuphrius writeth, that euen a light word was with him a sufficient colour to put any man to death.

Vpon what termes the tumults of *France* were first raised, the league instituted, the massacre contriued, and the warres continued, the closets of *Pius* the fift, and *Gregory* the thirteenth, can best testifie.

9. Traitors and mouers of Seditions.

A *Alexander* the third, manifestly ingaged himselfe in a plot of treason against *Fredericke*. For prooffe whereof, *Frederick* summoned a Dyet at *Norimberge*, assembled the Princes of the Empire, and before them caused the Popes traitorous letter, directed to the *Soldan*, to be opened, with the meanes of his deliuary.

Gregory the second procured all *Spaine*, *Aemylia*, *Liguria*, *Italy* & other prouinces to reuolt from the Empire: Antichristian-like forbidding the people to pay those tributs, which Christ himselfe had formerly commanded.

Sixtus the fourth by entertainment of murdering rascals hauing slaine *Julius* of *Medices*, was the occasion of great tumults in *Florence*.

Gregory the seuenth by plotting of infinit practises, studied to take away the life of *Henry* the fourth, so far

E c 2

foorth

forth that hee would haue murthered him in *S. Maries Church*, being at his praier. He soundly buffeted *Alexander* the second Emperour of the East, and barbarously slew *Cincius*. Against him (saith Bembo) crieth the Bloud of the Church, poured out by his miserable trecheries.

Paschal the eleuenth, spent the whole course of his life in warre and commotions.

Gregory the ninth, by his Legats publicquely commanded the Princes of *Germany* to depose *Fredericke*. Guilty of the same treason were *Iulius* the second. *Hadrian* the fourth, and *Gregory* the third.

Gregory the thirteenth, the successor of *Pius Quintus* in impiety and tyrannie was the Author, approuer and commender of the *Parisien* massacre: then the which the sunne neuer beheld a more Satanical stratagem, whence rose the prouerb; *Nuptia Gallice*.

By the conniuaunce of *Sixtus* the fifth, *Henry* the third, was stabbed to death by a trayterous Monke, and by him the said Murder was exceeding well allowed.

10. Parricides and impoysoners.

Paul the 3. impoysoned his mother and Niece, that the whole inheritance of the *Farnesian family*, might accrue vnto himselfe. His other sister also, whō he carnally knew, vpon fancying of others, he slew by poison.

Alexander the sixth, by poison made away *Gemen* the brother and competitor of *Batizet*, for the hire of 200. thousand crownes. And by the like medicine he purged away the life of many Senators & Cardinals. But preparing the like sauce at a supper for some other, by mistaking of the Bottle, himselfe drunk off the prepared cup, and died.

Inno.

Innocent the fourth, being corrupted by rewards, offered a boale of the like liquor to the Emperour *Conrade*. This the said Emperour verified by his publique letters.

Gregory the seuenth, by the ministerie of his companion *Brazatus*, slew *Nicholas* the eleuenth with poison. And againe, some Authors affirme, that by the seruice of this wicked villaine, he impoysoned six or eight Cardinals, obstacles in his preferment to the Papacie.

Paul the third, did his best, not onely to raise the Christian Princes, against *Henry* the eight king of *England*, but also plotted against him some practises of conspiracie.

Gregory the thirteenth, loaded with his Indulgences, *Parry*, and others, to haue laid violent hands vpon Queene *Elizabeth*.

II. Whoremongers.

John the eleuenth. This man, *Theodora* (with the more state and pomp to inioy her fractique pleasure) made first Bishop of *Bononia*, secondly, Archbishop of *Ranen-na*, and thirdly, Pope of *Rome*.

Christopher the first, who vpon the deposition of *Leo*, had by the assistance of his female acquaintance, inuaded the Papacie; was againe himselfe, by one *Sergius* the Amorite of a gallant whore, named *Marozia*, deposed and shamefully disgraced.

John the thirteenth, who liued player-like, not Pope-like, was addicted to all kinde of voluptuous pleasure.

Gregory the seuenth, had secret commerce with the Countesse *Matilda*.

E c 3

Clement.

Clement the fifth, was a publique fornicator, and kept for his Leman the Countesse of *Perigord*, a most beautifull Lady, and the daughter of the Earle of *Foix*.

12. Adulterers.

Sergius the third begat *John* the twelfth, vpon that most impudent whore *Marozia*: and in his Papacie committed infinite abominations amongst light women, as writeth *Luitprandus Ticinensis* in his third book and 12. chapter de *Imperatorum gestis*.

Lando the first: This man in fashion of an annoited Batchelor, according to the custome of those daies, consumed the greatest part of his life amongst women; and was himselfe at last consumed, when he had reigned seuen moneths.

John the eleuenth. *Theodora*, a famous whore and Lady of *Rome*, was so vehemently in loue with this *John* (the bastard of *Lando*, at his comming to *Rome*) that shee not onely desired, but inforced him to keepe her company. And the freer to inioy his company, she caused him to translate the Bishops sea from *Rome* to *Rauenna*, as writeth *Ticinensis* in his second booke. Cap. 13.

John the twelfth, the bastard of that famous whore *Marozia*, spent the time of his whole Papacie, in most bestial sensuality, of him thus writeth *Theodorick Niemensis*. Being mounted into the Papacie, he was sometime present at the huntings of wilde beafts: the rest of his time hee spent wantonly and pleasantly, and kept company with suspicious women.

John the thirteenth. None would serue his turne but

but virgins, & votareffes. The *Lateran Pallace* he made his stewes. He defiled *Stephana* his fathers concubine, the widdow *Rayner*; another widdow *Hanna*; and his owne Niece.

Alexander the sixth, was a most luxurious tyrant: No penne is able to register the rare, beastly and obscene qualities of this most impious Knaue. And such were *John* the 14. 15. 21. 24. *Benedict* the sixt and ninth. *Stephan* the eighth.

13. Incestuous persons.

Paul the third: He, to be made Cardinal & Bishop of *Ostia*, gaue vnto *Alexander* the sixth, his sister *Iulia Farnese*, to be deflowred. Another of his sisters, whom hee kept for his owne store, for playing false with others, he poysoned. *Nicholas Quercus* taking him and his wife *Laura Farnese* (though his Niece) together in company, gaue him such a stab with his dagger, that the scar remained with him to his dying day. Another of his Nieces (a delicat wench, no lesse admired for her mayden-like modesty, then her choise beauty) this Goat-like olde Knaue solicited to incest & vn-naturall whoredome. And to inioy his owne daughter *Constantia*, with more liberty, whom he had often heretofore knowne, he impoysoned her husband *Bosius Sfortia*.

Alexander the sixth, was more familiar with his impudent daughter *Lucretia*, then stoode with his honestie.

John the thirteenth, often times defiled *Stephana* his fathers concubine. Such an other was *Benedict* the 3.

14. *Sosla-*

14. Sodomits.

IVLIVS the second. This man, as we read in a certaine Commentary of the Masters of *Paris*, abused himselfe with two young gentlemen (besides others) whom *Anne* Queene of *France* had sent vnto *Robert* Cardinall of *Nantes*, to be brought vp and instructed.

Iulius the third. Being Legat of *Bononia*, he vsed one *Innocent*, his ancient Minion ouer familiarly. Being Bishop, against the mind of the Colledge, he admitteth him his houshold seruant, and createth him one of the Cardinals. The report went at *Rome*, and disperfed by libells, that *Ioue* kept *Ganimes*, but an ill fauoured one. At what time his Holinesse presented this his darling to the Colledge, and every man denied his consent: for that his presented had neither vertue nor good manners to aduance him: It is reported that he should say: *What more saw you in me, I beseech you, when you preferred me to this Papacie? wherefore sithence we are all but fortunes tennis-balls, and by her good fauour you haue assisted me: so in like maner be you fauourable to this my boy, and I will create him a Cardinall.* But after that some writers had brandished this Catife for his blasphemies and villanies, he procured a fellow as wicked as himselfe, viz. *Ierome Mutius*, to defend his actions, and thereto he put his approbation. *Virgerius* writeth, that he abstained not from the Cardinals themselves. In the time of this incarnate diuill liued, and issued from his priuate closet, that Apostaticall Legat *Iobannes à Casa*, Archbishop of *Beneuent*, who in Italian richmes writ a Poeme in commendation of the sinne of

of Sodomy; and Intitled it, *Opus diuinum*: affirming that he tooke great delight therein, and neuer knew any other venery.

Leo the tenth made alwaies very much of his car-kasse, and gaue his mind to all variety of pleasure, but especially to the loue of boies.

Sixtus the fourth built a famous brothell house at *Rome*, and dedicated it to both Sexes. *Wessell* of groning reporteth in his treatise of Popish Indulgences, that at the requestes of *Peter Ruerius* (his Fatherhoods Catanut) as also at the instance of *S. Sixtus* Cardinall and Patriarch of Constantinople, and *Ierome* his brother; his Holinesse graunted his faculty to all the houshold seruants of the Cardinall of *S. Luce*, chiefe hunts-man vnto *Paul* the eleuenth (a fearefull thing to be spoken) in the hot months of *Iune*, *Iulie*, and *August*, to vse the masculine sinne; signing the Bull with this clause: *Fiat quod petitur.*

Petrus Mendoza called Cardinall *Valentinian*, not contented with a troope of euill women, nor satisfied with the Queene her selfe; desired and oft obtained of *Alexander* the sixt to vse in holy single-life, as his best beloued spouse, his bastard Sonne the Marquesse of *Zaneth*.

John the four and twentieth was accused in the Counsell of *Constance*, to haue been a Sodomit, an adulterer, and a whoremonger.

Clement the seuenth. Of him it is recorded in a certaine Commentary vpon the Articles of the Masters of *Paris*, that hee was, a bastard, a poysoner, a Man-slayer, a Pandar, a Symonianist, a Sodomit, a Periurer, a deflowerer, a Rauisher, a Geomancer, a

F f

Church-

Church-robber, and a plotter of all villanies. Such like were *Benedict* the third, *John* the thirteenth, fourteenth and *Paul* the third.

Hence complaineth *Luit prandus*, that the Lateran pallace became by time and sufferance to be a receptacle of vncleane persons.

15. *The Favorites of Whores.*

VICTOR the third obtained the Papacy, neither by the choice of the Cardinals, nor by the suffrages of the people, but was thereunto hoisted by his Mistrisse *Matilda* with the assistance of the Normans.

Urban the second, and *Victor*, by the same party and like meanes, obtained the like preferment.

John the eleventh, by the wealth of *Theodora* an impudent gamester, ran the same fortune.

Paul the third had a roll of forty five thousand whores, of whom he exacted a monthly tribut. And no wonder, for if fame deceiue not, I haue heard it reported by men of good experience, that *Rome* is a City consisting of about five thousand soules, whereof a third part were accounted to bee light weomen and Church-men.

Sextus the fourth was very bountifull towards their maintenance, and had to spare for his friends and seruants. It should seeme hee augmented their numbers; for their hyer prooued very aduantageous to his Exchequer, euery whore being rated to pay weekly to his Holinesse behoofe, a peece of their Coine, termed a *Iulius*. The yeerely Entrado whereof many times

times amounteth to the yeerly value of foure hundred thousand dukats. And the Officers of the Church doe as duely make their accounts for this Entrado, as for any other of the Churches reuenues.

Lucius the third ratified the sacring of whoore-mongers.

John the thirteenth being deposed for his enormous villanies, the weomen of his old acquaintance by promising the Romane nobility their rewards out of the Churches treasure, inuited them to Armes, and wrought his restitution.

John the eight. Shee was at first called *Gilberta*; but counterfaiting the virill Sex, and the habit of a young man, went first to *Athens* with a Monke her sweete heart. Where after her great proficiency in the Arts, and the death of her friend, Shee returned alone to Rome, but alwayes in her late disguise. Where in all disputations, behauing her selfe for eloquence and readinesse of acute answers with admiration, shee so gayned the good esteemes of all her Auditorie, that *Leo* beeing dead, shee was chosen Pope, and sate in *Peters* Chayre two yeeres and sixe moneths.

During her Popedom she was gotten with child by a familiar friend, her Chapleine, and in a solemne Procession, betweene the Colosse and Saint *Clements* Church shee fell in trauaile, and in the middest of the City, in the streetes, and before all the people, she brought forth a Sonne, and through paine died in the place. Certainlie it can not bee doubted, but that God suffered this whore to bee Pope, to represent in plaine termes that Babylonian creature,

spoken of in the 17. of the *Apocalips*, to the end that of her selfe, and her enchantments, the Elect might beware.

16. *Bawdes.*

Paul the third, surrendred his sister *Iulia Fernese* vnto *Alexander* the sixth, to be defloured.

Sixtus the fourth, by the testimony of *Agrippa*, amongst the moderne Pandors, was the most eminent; As the man who excelled all other builders in the edifying of that most stately brothel-house, which he dedicated to both sexes.

17. *Bastards.*

Martin the eleuenth, by a common woman, was the sonne of a Negromantique Priest.

So was *John* the eleuenth, begotten by Pope *Lando*.

Item, *John* the twelfth, begotten by *Sergius* the third vpon *Marozia*.

Item, *John* the fourteenth, then sonne of *John* the twelfth.

Item, *John* the sixteenth, the sonne of *Leo* a Priest.

Item, *Benedict* the eighth, the sonne of Bishop *Gregorie*.

Item, *John* the seuenteenth, another sonne of the same *Gregory*.

Item, *Silvester* the third, the sonne of the Arch-priest *Lawrance*.

Item, *Adrian* the fourth, the sonne of Monk *Robert*.

Item, *Eugenius* the fourth, the sonne of *Gregory* the twelfth, Pope.

Item, *Clement* the seuenth, the son of *Leo* the tenth.

Item,

Item, *Gregory* the ninth, the sonne of *Innocent* the third.

Item, *Adrian* the fifth, the son of *Innocent* the fourth.

Item, *Gregory* the eleuenth, the sonne of *Clement* the sixth.

18. *Drunkards.*

Leo the tenth, and *Nicholas* the fifth were famous for the loue of their liquor.

19. *Cometous persons.*

Theodore of *Niem*, did long agoe delineat the Auarice of the Romane Bishops. For hee compared the Popes Exchequer to the Ocean, whereunto all Riuers paid tribute, and yet was it neuer satisfied.

Histories do affirme, that at one gleaning the Popes had out of *France* ninety hundred thousand crownes. Whereupon *Lewes* the ninth complained, that his Kingdome was miserably exhausted by these Harpies.

The wealthy Kingdome of *England* to be miserably impouerished, partly by tithes, partly by procurations of the Apostolique Legats, partly by donatiues, and partly by the sale of Benefices, *Mathew Paris* in his time did much complaine. In those daies, sayeth hee, Pope *Gregory* either so permitting or procuring; the insatiable auarice of the Romane Clergy, grew to be so feruent, that without any sparke of modesty (confounding all law and equity, as a common and brazen-faced Harlot) set all to sale to all sorts of persons, and reputed Vsury as a trifle, and Simony as a matter of no inconuenience.

Ef 3

Germany

Germany was pillaged after the same fashion.

By warre and cunning, the Pope wrested from the Emperour his lawfull Patrimonies, some after some, throughout *Italy*.

By harlots they make also rich purchases; they put out their mony to Interest, and account no gaine, base or vnlawfull

20. Church-robbers.

Boniface the seuenth, when he saw that it was no longer safe for him to reside at *Rome*, priuily and feloniously he purloyned certaine rich trefurers out of the Church of *Saint Peter*, and fled to *Constantinople*.

Clement the seuenth, was accused for periurie, sacrilege, and impoysoning, &c.

21. Simonianists.

From *Gregory* the ninth, *Cesar* obtained his absolution for the price of one hundred thousand ounces of gold.

Benedict the ninth, being stricken with feare; for one thousand and five hundred pounds, solde the Papacie to his Chapman *John Gratian*, afterward called *Gregory* the sixth. Hereupon *John* the Monk complained, that *Rome* was founded by theeues, and so continued vntill this day, to liue by spoiles. And *Alan Chartistierius*, saith, you haue made the diuine sanctuary a banke of Exchange.

Alike in conscience were *Leo* the tenth. *Innocent* the eighth, *Siluester* the third, *Gregory* the sixth, *Gregorie*

ric the twelfth, *John* the eighteenth, &c. So that *Bernhard* also complained, That the Holy offices of the Church were become meereley questuarie.

22. Ambitious persons.

Iohn the foure and twentieth, by ambition onely affected the Papacie. For by the testimony of *Stella*, when he liued at *Bononia*, he carried himselfe more like a Lord then a Legat; He was gouernour of a great Armie, and vnto him the fathers were glad to resort to elect a new Pope; he gaue out many vnder hand-threats, that vnlesse they would present one to the Papacie, who without exception, himselfe should very well like of, he should not preuaile. Whereupon, many were nominated, of whom he meant neuer to approue one. Whereupon, the Fathers beseeched him to name the man whom he best fancied. Then giue me Peters cloake (quoth he) and I will bestow it on him that shall be Pope. Which being done, he cast the cloake vpon his owne shoulders, saying, Behold your Pope. Which stratagem, though it displeased the Fathers, yet they thought it fitter to be silent, then to aggrauate displeasure.

John the three & twentieth, was a man most ambitious, writing vnto the Greekes, That hee onely was head of the Church, and Christ his Vicar. Vnto whom the Grecians re-answered in as many words. we constantly acknowledge thy high authority ouer thy subiects: thy high pride we can not indure; thy auarice wee are not able to satisfie. The diuell be with thee; the Lord is with vs.

So *John* the two and twentieth, after a long vacation, being made Cardinall by the Councel of *Naples*; being

ing intrusted with the election, elected himselfe: which by the Canons he could not doe.

So *Boniface* the third that ambitious beast, in the midst of a tumultuous number, (yet many gainesaying it) was heaved into the Papacy; confirmed, worshipped, and saluted Lord and Prince of all Bishops by that adulterous Emperor, parricide and tyrant, *Phocas*.

Afterward by ardent importunity, or rather by his immoderate bribery, he obtained, that *Rome* should be called the *Head* of all the christian Churches, vpon these idle reasons forfooth: That the Empire first took his origen from *Rome*, and so *Peter* gaue vnto his successors of *Rome* the Keies, &c. Read the history of *Phocas* and this *Boniface*, to be further satisfied of their mutuall knaueries.

Let *Paschal* the eleuenth ranke with these fellows. For when *William* procurator and Clarke to king *Henry*, speaking in his masters right, amongst other reasons constantly affirmed: *That the King had rather loose his kingdome, then the Inuestiture of Prelats*: the Pope made this proud reply. *If as thou saiest, thy master will not suffer the Ecclesiasticall presentations to bee alienated from him, for the losse of his kingdome; then take thou notice precisely, I speake it before God, that neither I without the price of his head will suffer him to inioy them quietly.*

Clement the sixt answered the Embassadors of *Lewes* the Emperor as arrogantly: *That he would neuer pardon his Maiesty, before he had resigned his Imperiall right, sequestred himselfe, his children, and all his goods into his custody, and promised neuer to retake them but by the Bishops grace and good liking.*

So great was the spirit of *Boniface* the eight, that almost

One of the
Popes best be-
nefactors.

A good Pope,
that would not
in those daies
touch an Empe-
ror before he
had become a
private person.
A Popish mi-
racle.

most he disdained all men. For such was his ambition, that he suborned certaine companions in lieu of Angels with a soft voice by night, to sound in the chamber of Pope *Celestine*, that he should voluntarily resigne the Popedome, if hee meant to saue his life. Which the simple man performed accordingly. But *Boniface* contrary to Law and equitie, stepping into the Popedome, layd violent hands vpon *Celestine* traueilling out of *Rome*, to lead his life in some solitary mansion, and cast him into perpetuall prison.

The same *Boniface* instituted the *Iubile*, and celebrated it, in the yeere of our Lord 1300. promising to all people that would visit the City, full remission of their sinnes. He reiected an Embassie sent from the Emperor *Albert*. Vpon the first day of the solemnity, he appeared in his Pontificalibus, and bestowed his benedictions vpon the people. The next day he came forth accoutred like an Emperor, and commanded a naked sword to be borne before him, with this acclamation: *Behold here two swords. This is the right I haue to kingdomes and Empire; they are all in my disposition. The kings of the earth, unlesse they will receiue their kingdome from this holy See, are to be accursed and deposed.* Finally hee gloried in his pride, that he was the porter of Heauen, and ought to be adiudged by no man.

Adrian the fourth did grieuoussly chide *Fredericke* the Emperor for holding his left stirrope, as he came from horse. *ut supra. fo.*

Alexander the third in more base manner vsed an other Emperor as before. *fo.*

Stephen the second deposed *Childerick*, and preferred

G g

Pipin

Note what persons the Pope bindeth to his service.

Pipin to his place. He shaued *Childericks* crowne, and thrust him into a monastery. *Pipin* lay agroose vpon the earth, kissed the Popes toe, held his horse by the bridle, performed the office of a footman, and gaue him his oath of perpetuall fidelity.

Damasus the second. This man was Chancellour to his predecessor; but his ambition not able to stay the death of his master, it is reported, that he gaue him a dram to dispatch him.

Note.

Constantine the first. This man was the first that put his foot to be kissed by an Emperor.

Benedict the third followed the president, and suffered himselfe to be worshipped as a most holy Father, or rather like a terrene Idoll.

John the seuen and twentieth did the like to *Crescentius* the Roman Consul.

Martin the fift to *Sigismund* Cesar.

Leo the fourth gaue his foot to all commers, and against the Canons of the *Aquisgran* Councel, first aduanced a Papall crosse, and adorned it with pretious stones, commanding it to be caried before him. Of the like stampe were *Boniface* the first, *Symmachus*, *Boniface* the second, *Siluerius*, *Martin* the second, *Formosus* the first, *Theodorus* the second, *Benedict* the fourth, *Sergius* the third, *John* the tenth, *Gregory* the sixt, &c.

23. Monsters.

B*Benedict* the ninth. Historiographers doe write that this *Benedict* was seene neere a certaine Mill by an Hermit in a most horrible shape. His body was like a Beare,

Beare, adioyned thereto the head and taile of an Asse. And being asked by him, how he came to be thus metamorphosed: It is reported, that he answered: *In this shape doe I wander, for that in my Popedome I liued without reason, without God, and without limitation.*

Nicholas the third begat a sonne on his Concubin, who had hayre and clawes like vnto a Beare. *Vide Iahannem Nouiomagum.*

24. Illiterate persons.

B*Benedict* the eleuenth was a meere Laique. And so were *Benedict* the ninth, *Sergius* the third, *Eugenius* the fourth, *John* the ninth, *John* the one and twentieth, &c.

OF THE FALL AND DEATH OF certaine Romane Bishops.



Adrian the third flying from Rome, came vnto Venice in the Habit of his Cooke: where he lurked in a certaine monastery, and was made the Gardiner of the garden thereof.

John the fise and twentieth traueiling towards *Constance* fell headlong from his litter: a presage of his future deposition. For many faults beeing objected against him in the Councell, he began to flie: but being taken and preuented; he was cast into prison, and there remained for three yeeres.

G g 2

Siluerius

Siluerius Campanus was banished into *Pontus* by *Theodora* the wife of the Emperor *Iustinian*. The same *Theodora* her selfe impleaded *Vigilius* for not performing his word: arrested him to *Constantinople*; there contumeliously disgraced him, whipped him, cast an halter about his neck; caused him to be haled through all the streets of the City, and finally banished him.

Constantinus the second, was eieſted by a Councel: and beeing deprived as well of his eies as of his Pope-dome, he was cast into a monastery, and after into a perpetuall prison.

Benedict the fift was deprived of his papall dignity, and sent into banishment.

Stephen the eight was so forely wounded in a popular tumult, that for the deformity of his wound, hee was neuer after willing to shew himselfe in publique.

Innocent the fourth died miserably. *Robert of Lincoln* reproved his vile behauiour, his avarice, his pride, and his tyranny, and that as well by word of mouth, as by writing. For which the Pope citeth him to *Rome*, and iniuriously condemneth him. From him *Robert* appealeth vnto Christ as his Iudge. Vpon the death of *Lincolne* (as writeth *Cestriensis lib. 7.*) a voice is heard in the Court of *Rome*, crying; *Miserable man, make ready to come to the tribunall of God.* Vpon the day following the Pope is found dead in his bed, and vpon his body appeared a blewish blow, as if he had been stricken with a cudgell.

Silueſter the second beeing at *Maſſe* was attached with a suddain feuer; and by the noise of spirits (witnesse

nesse *Peter Præmonſtratenſis*) he perceiued that his end drew nigh, to pay the diuell his due vpon composition. He confessed his errors, and (as saith *Benno*) preuented a miserable and fearefull destruction. Yet in the anguish of death, he desired that his hands, his tongue, and his priuities, wherewith euen in his single life, he had blasphemed God, by sacrificing to diuels, might be cut off.

If it were a true confession, no doubt.

Nicholas the third in midst of his greatest imaginations, was taken with an apoplexy, and without one word speaking breathed his last.

Paul the second hauing merrily supped, was also taken with the apoplexy, and departed, without sight of any man.

Paschal the second was taken by the Emperour, and thrust into prison.

Gelasius the eleuenth. One *Cinthius* a powerfull patrician of the City made an assault vpon him, tooke him by the throat, cast him to the earth, spurned him with his feet, and cast him into prison.

Boniface the eight, Grown desperate with the ouerwaight of fury, gaue vp his vnhappy ghost loden with an infinit heape of mischieuous actions. This is that Pope, of whom it is recorded, *That he entred as a wolfe, liued as a Lyon, and dyed as a Dog.*

Gregory the sixt was taken prisoner, and sent into banishment.

Gregory the ſeuenth for his innumerable wickednesses was deposed by the Emperor *Henry*, and in banishment ended his daies.

Eugenius the fourth priuily flying in a monastical

call coole, together with his friend *Arsenius*, entred a fisher-boat. Vpon report whereof, his enemies followed to seeke him with stones and shot.

Clement the seuenth, for his conspiring with the *French King* against the Emperour, was made prisoner by *Charles* his Captaines, and wonderfully derided by the *Germane* souldiers.

John the eleuenth, was taken by the souldiers of *Guido*, committed to prison, & stifled with a firplice thrust into his mouth.

Boniface the eleuenth died suddenly.

John the eighth, not that teeming woman, but a man, died together with his *Crescentius*, hauing his eies first put out, and his whole body mangled.

Benedict the eleuenth, was poisoned at an Abbesses banquet with a dish of figges.

Benedict the sixth, no doubt for such like malapert practises, as in these dayes Popes play with mightie Princes, was taken by one *Cinthius*, a powerfull Roman Citizen, thrust into the Mole of *Hadrian*, now *Saint Angelo*, the prison of the basest offendours, and there miserably strangled.

Hadrian the fourth: Into his mouth slew a flie, which could not be taken out, nor thrust downe, by any Art of the Physitian: so that it stopped his breath, and choked him.

Lucius the second, with an armed band, assaulted the Citizens in the Capitol, of purpose vtterly to destroy the whole Senate. The newes runneth through the City: the people fly to Armes: and a strong fight is managed. *Lucius* ingaging himselfe in the hottest of his

his armed troupes, is so mauled with stones and shot, that a little while after he surrendred his life.

John the two and twentieth. At the instant wherein he promised vnto himselfe a long continuance of his life, was suddenly taken away, and was alone found buried amongst timber and rubbish, by the fall of a chamber.

Clement the sixt was suddenly taken with an Apopleume, and died.

Leo the tenth suddenly died with an astonishing disease.

Leo the third was so odious vnto the people, that in a certaine Proceffion being cast from his horse; they dispoyled him of his pontificall ornaments; buftered him well fauouredly, and committed him to prison. And as some report, they depriued him both of his eies and his tongue.

Christopher the first being deposed from the Papacy, was constrained to lead a monasticall life. Not long after he was taken from the said monastery by *Sergius* his successor, and committed to a most seuerer prison, and there ended his daies in great misery.

¶ These vnder written were poisoned.

JOHN the sixteenth, nineteenth, & twentieth. *Clement* the second. *Damasus* the second. *Leo* the ninth. *Victorinus* the second. *Nicholas* the second. *Alexander* the second. *Victorinus* the third. *Gregory* the eight. *Celestine* the fourth. *Vrbane* the sixt. *Alexander* the fift. *Clement* the seuenth.

Thus

Thus much for their manners : and now to stop the mouthes of those who cry out ; what is this to Religion ? Behold here for a conclusion, not the fruits, but the very points, some few for a taste of these their irreligious documents.

BLASPHEMIES OF THE CANONISTES.



HE Bishop of Rome is God. *Dist. 96. ca. Satis euidenter.*

2. The Pope is not man. *Lib. 1. Sexti de electione. tit. 6. ca. Fundamenta in Glossatore.*

3. The Pope is neither God, nor man. *In prologo clementinarum in glossatore.*

4. It is lawfull for no man to imagine or practise to transgresse the precepts of the Apostolicall Sea. *Dist. 20. ca. Nulli. Item dist. 12. & 22.*

5. An Heretique is hee who is not obedient to the Popes decrees. *ibid. in gloss.*

6. He is guilty of Sacriledge, that belieth the Pope : For he supplieth the place of the liuing God on earth. *De penit. dist. 1. ca. libenter ignosco.*

7. The Pope is the vniuersall Bishop through al parts of the earth. *Lib. 5. Sexti. ca. felicitis. in gloss.*

8. The Pope is Lord of all principalities vpon earth. *Li. 3. Sexti. tit. 16. cap. Periculofo.*

9. Let no man dare to say vnto the Pope, Lord why dost

dost thou doe thus, or thus ? *In extrau. tom. 22. tit. 5. ca. ad Apostolatus in gloss. 2. li. 1. Decretal. tit. 7. ca. 5. vide gloss.*

10. The Pope by vertue of these words, *Thou art Peter : or, feede my sheepe,* obtaineth primacy. *In premio Sexti in gloss.*

11. No mortall man may sit in iudgement vpon the Pope. *Caus. 9. quest. 3. c. nemo. Item aliorum. & dist. 40. ca. Papa. Caus. 12. quest. 2. ca. quisquis. in gl. dist. 40. ca. non nos. in gloss.*

12. It is lawfull for no creature to call into question the iudgement of the Apostolique Sea, or to delay the sentence thereof. *Caus. 17. quest. 4. c. nemini.*

13. The Pope may dispence against the Apostles. *dist. 34. collector in gloss. dist. 82. ca. presbiter. in gloss. caus. 15. quest. 6. ca. Auctoritatem. in gloss.*

14. The Pope hath celestially arbitrement. *Li. 1. decre. Greg. tit. 1. ca. 5.*

15. The Pope may change the Nature of things. *ibid.*

16. The Pope of nothing can make something. *ibid.*

17. The Popes will is a Law. *ibid.*

18. The Pope may dispense about the law. *ibid.*

19. The Pope may cause an vniust decree to be received for iust. *ibid.*

20. The Pope hath fulnesse of power. *ibid.*

21. As is the difference betweene the Sunne and the Moone : such is the difference between the Pope and a King. *Li. 1. decre. Greg. tit. 33. solita.*

22. Persons vniustlie condemned and oppressed ought to seeke redresse and amends from the Church of Rome. *Caus. 2. quest. 6. c. ideo.*

Last of all,

*By these Mens Liues, Manners, and Doctrines new,
Pen'd by the trauaile of my Pen; O you,
who read the leazings of this false-mouth'd crue,
Learne these their Liues, Words, Maners to eschue.*

CONTRADICTIONS MORE REASONABLE, then Canonisticall.

B. De potest.
pape. fo. 6.



Learned and noble preacher (if any such be amongst the Iesuits) being demaunded his iudgement concerning the opinion of Boninus (a more peremptory Champian for the Canonists then any of his fellowes) *Eum vocabat Papalem parasitum, viz.* termed him a Papall parasite.

Li. 10. Hist. Fr. in
vita Caroli vij.

Gaguin a learned and religious historiographer, in his time, thus taxeth this their irregular vsurpation: *Such is (saith he) at this day their haughtinesse and Lordship, that hauing small respect vnto Princes, they boast that all things are lawfull vnto themselves soly.* Neither in my Age did any of them ascend the Papacy, but forthwith hee enriched his nephewes with infinit wealth, and honours.

Lib. 3. de Confid.
ad Eug.
In vita Boni-
facij.

S. Bernard long before Gaguin: *Doth not now ambition more then deuotion, possesse the Apostolicall succession?*

Hereupon said Platina: In this maner dyed that Boniface, who studied more to terrifie, then to teache Kings, Princes, and nations. Who for his pleasure made it a matter of pastime, to giue and retake kingdomes, to interdict Nations, and absolue them afterwards. *Gaguin againe; Such was the end of Boniface,*

face, the scorner of all men: who hauing no remembrance of his Master Christ, did his vtmost, according to his priuate fancy, to take and to giue kingdomes. When meane time, he was not ignorant, that he was his vicegerent vpon earth, whose kingdome was not of this world, nether compounded of earthly, but of heavenly perquisits, &c.

Li. 7. hist. in vita
Philippi Pulchri.

Pius the sixth said vnto Martin Aspibenetaz, That the Lawyers (meaning the Canonists) accustomed to attribute *plus satis potestatis*, more then reasonable supereminency to the Papacy.

Nauar. in Com.
Can. Non liceat
Eape. 12. q. 2.

No wonder then, if I. Gers. termed them *pusillos*, that is, weake and simple Christians, who being deceiued (his own words) by vnlearned Glossors, *doe esteeme the Pope onely to bee God, hauing all power in heauen and in earth.* Certainly, *tales adultores*, such Parasites haue corrupted the iudgement and dispositions of many Popes. As concerning whome, *Iohan. de turre-cremata* thus censureth. *It is a wonder (saith he) that the Popes doe treat so modestly of their Patent of Power, and yet certaine Doctorculi, vpstart Doctors without any true ground will, to flatter them, euen equalize them to God himselfe.*

In Cano. Coniun-
ctio. 35. q. 2.

In the samel list doth Cardinall Cusanus ranke certaine other Authors; *who (saith he) in deauouring more then befitteth, or beseemeth holy Church, to make famous the Roman Sea (in truth worthy all commendation) spare not to ground themselves vpon Apocriphall writings. Verbum sapienti.*

FINIS.